

INTRODUCTION:

Since my return to the United States after five months' service as Psychiatrist to the Nuremberg Jail, I have found considerable curiosity in America about the personalities of the War Criminals. I used the word "curiosity" deliberately because very few individuals, except professionals, showed any real interest. The average American seems to have already made up his mind that these Nazis are guilty, and, in addition, believes that on the whole, they are either insane or are genius types with perverted viewpoints.

Most of the questions that have been asked, therefore, are concerned with intimate details about life in the Nuremberg Jail, or are requests for spicy bits of gossip about the prisoners themselves. If the questioner does mention the mental state or personality of one of the prisoners, he usually begins by stating: "What kind of people are they really? Of course, they are all insane, but what sort of insanity do they have?"

Because of this general belief, most people feel that while the Germans may have followed such leaders, members of other civilized communities would certainly not be taken in by such pathological personalities. On the other hand, if the questioner inclines to the belief that these men are some kind of curious super-human, then the feeling seems to be that such types are fortunately rare, and are not

to be found in other countries.

As a result of these feelings, therefore, no one seems to take seriously the possibility that such a group of men could be organized in any country of the earth. Careful study of these men, including constant jail observation for a period of five months, indicates that they are neither actually insane, nor are they strikingly unusual. It is true that some of them definitely are deviates from what we ordinarily call normal, but under no circumstances could even these individuals be placed under custodial care, according to the laws of our country, nor would they be considered anything but excentrics or fanatics. In addition, searching studies concerning Hitler's personality reveal that while he was an individual of severe neurotic personality, he was not remarkable, and it would be very easy to find individuals of similar mental ability with identical neurotic backgrounds in any country.

After living with these people for some time, and spending my spare time studying the general German reactions to the Third Reich, it became obvious that there were several lessons which we could learn from a study of the personalities of Hitler and his henchmen, and of the sociological structure of the German people themselves. One of the most important values in civilization is what Korsybsky has called "Time-binding"-- the ability

top 1a

to learn from written and spoken words and the experience of others without having to experience a situation personally. It is imperative to our country and to the future of civilization that every intelligent American learn a lesson from the horror of the Third Reich without experiencing it. The devastation of Europe, the deaths of millions of unfortunate peoples, the almost destruction of the values of the whole world, will have gone for naught if we do not derive some conclusions concerning these forces which produced such chaos.

Everything in back from at least 2 or 3 independent sources.

We must learn the why of the ~~Third Reich~~ ^{Nazi success}, so that we can intelligently take steps to prevent the recurrence of ~~this~~ ^{such an} evil at any future time during the course of civilization.

In order to understand ~~the reasons behind the formation of~~ ^{is in the} Nazi Germany, one must ~~first consider~~ ^{thoroughly} the personalities of its leaders. Taken collectively, we find them to be a shrewd group of men, ^{deliberately} organized to take over the business of running Europe and as much of the world as they could dominate.

In discussing these top Nazis, it must be emphasized that we are interested at present only in their personalities as they appeared to the German people during the years 1918 through 1944. It is extremely tempting, of course, to study each leader as an individual, but such studies would require painstaking research into his early life, his childhood development, his family background,

and the surroundings in which he grew up. Such studies have been made for certain of these leaders, and at present, detailed pieces of research are under way to secure data on others. Such studies do not belong in a book of this type, however, and as they are completed, will appear in the medical psychological literature.

For our purposes, therefore, we have limited the material to include only personality summaries of the individuals as they appear ^{ed in Nuremberg Jail} at present.

Assume reader knows history of Nazi movement.
In this book, we are primarily interested in the answer to the question, why did German people follow these particular men along a path which led to utter destruction of their Nation?

What is it in these leaders that enable them to warp the minds and control the actions of 80,000,000 people?

The answer to these questions can be given partly by analyzing the personality patterns of Hitler and his henchmen, together with an analysis of the basic patterns of the German people as a whole. In addition, some mention must be made of the socio-economic situation in Germany at the time of Hitler's rise to power, and finally, we must include a brief discussion relating the appeal of the leaders, as evidenced by their personalities to the wants and needs of the German people.

It is obvious, of course, that the discussion of Adolf Hitler is not first-hand information.

most of Hitler's
Numerous books have been written, giving more or less complete ^{by the story} biographies of Hitler's ~~early~~ life, and ~~Biographical and environmental data~~ surroundings. Such facts ^{structure} are of extreme importance in deducing the ~~way~~ of Hitler's personality, and in answering the problem of how his personality came to develop along the lines ^{it did} into which he finally matured. ~~But~~ for the purposes of the ^{present} book, I have been more interested in the comments of his contemporaries, and particularly the data given by his personal physicians, secretaries, and others with whom he was in intimate contact. Such reports contain material hitherto unpublished, and for the major part, are critical evaluations of his personality, as it was presented to the German people. How he got this personality is a problem for detailed analytical study, and will only be suggested ^{here} in ~~this~~ book.

Hitler's underlings, at any rate, all of those ^{were in Nuremberg Jail, were} who are ~~on trial at present~~, are easier to deal with because of the opportunity afforded to study each one of them personally. ^{Here} again, the emphasis will not be placed upon their early development, but rather upon those traits of character already developed in their adult life, which caused them to be selected by Hitler for their particular job, and which enabled them to control the thought and action of the German people.

In studying these individuals in the Nuremberg Jail, it is extremely possible that some elements of their personality may have been misjudged. In the Jail, they represented penitent, discouraged individuals, who had little hope for the future; having been in solitary

4

confinement for some time, they were extremely willing to talk to anyone. In addition, they were obviously ~~anxious~~ ^{desire} to curry favor with any individual of authority. Consequently, their reaction patterns showed more friendliness and less aggressive arrogance than their behavior before the fall of Germany. Studying them in Jail can be compared to studies made in test tubes, as compared with studies made in actual life situations. Realizing this difference, proper evaluation can be approached by studies of these personalities through the media of motion pictures of their previous actions and analysis of their speeches and writings.

Such studies have been made and will be included in the overall personality pattern of each individual. In addition, the general reaction of many of the defendants was tinged with varying degrees of depression. In their present circumstances, such depressive trends might reasonably be expected, and the general feeling of the defendants is clearly put in a letter which one of them wrote to his wife:

"I doubt whether anyone can understand our state of mind without having experienced all this. The worries about the closest members of the family, the sons missing in action, the destroyed property, and all the personal pain about the whole country, about other relatives, the painful thoughts about the future without any regard to our own fate-- all this is so unique that it can only be compared with the

Thirty Years' War of Destruction. The great difference is that the catastrophe came within two years and to an extent never witnessed before. We intended to build a more beautiful Germany, and instead, we now have a heap of rubbish, unimaginable, and not to be eliminated in decades."

Such general reactions have appeared from time to time in each defendant, and must be considered as a reaction of them all.

Finally, the fact that so many of the sources of information are still alive and may later be brought to trial requires anonymity in all fairness to them. Much of the material has been gathered either by direct interview from the individual concerned, or by securing information from his co-workers. Such material as was purely medical in nature or did not contribute to the overall estimation of the personality has been deleted from the material used. The general estimation of an individual's personality is not necessarily a confidential matter, however, and it is felt that if we are to gain any lesson whatsoever from the Third Reich, we can do so only by understanding the individuals who ruled it. Such lessons are imperative, and must be made accessible to everyone. Consequently, I have not hesitated to make the fullest use of any material where it plays a part in yielding a better understanding of why the leaders of the Third Reich were so successful in their handling of the German multitudes. ~~The only information which has been withheld is purely medical and not~~

The author expresses deepest appreciation to Lt. Col. Ronce Juchli who was chief med. off. of the prison, for his outstanding co-operation. Also I am grateful to the other members of the medical & nursing staff, who ~~contributed~~ ^{me in every way.} contributory. In addition, in many instances,

I have not revealed the source of certain information, but in every instance, have had such sources properly authenticated, and this information is at any time readily available to interested individuals.

← Dr. ~~Gustave Gilbert~~, formerly a ~~Captain~~ in the U. S. Army, was most skillful in acting as interpreter and in gathering certain test data. I am deeply grateful to him and also to the Commanding Officer of the Internal Security Detachment, Internal Military Tribunal, Colonel B. C. Andrews, ^{U.S.} who was extremely considerate and facilitated my work at every step. I should also like to pay tribute at this point to the splendid job the Internal Security Detachment has done in guarding and maintaining these criminals. The ~~members~~ ^{members} of this group were all most cooperative, in particular Lt. Dorothy Mears, who was instrumental in ^{obtaining} ~~securing~~ information and data from the female prisoners in the Jail. To all these officers and men, I express my heartfelt thanks.

Drs. Richard M. Brickner, D. Erwin Cameron, Nolan D. C. Lewis, Margaret Mead, and John A. P. Millet have all contributed much to this study in time, and more important, ^{by} in encouragement. Without their support, I should never have attempted a book. Without the generous aid of Mr. Nathan Schulman, who provided the physical facilities, and constantly offered assistance, I should certainly never have completed it.

I also owe a debt of thanks to the many translators who assisted me in ^{obtaining} securing the various quoted statements which make up a large part of this book. The Department of State Publication #1864, National Socialism, was also a most helpful source of other translations, used both at Nuremberg and in the present work. I have made full use of these translations, believing that through reading the actual words of the Nazis, one gains a clearer picture of their mental mechanisms.

CHAPTER I. THE TOP MAN.

The best way to look at Hitler's Germany is to consider it from the same point of view as did the Nazi leaders themselves - as a huge organization, ruthless and all powerful, impersonal in its dealings with its subordinates, demanding only results, caring little for the manner of their achievement.

This impersonality, this total lack of human feeling or conscience, is most striking, and stems from Hitler's ~~attitude~~^{choice} that a few men carefully chosen and adroitly assigned, can be the totalitarian leaders of an entire country. Hitler selected and assigned these men, and with him they made up the governing board of Germany. That they functioned remarkably well is a matter of record. ~~In spite of their abilities, however, they resemble any similar sort of board of directors which might function in any similarly ruthless organization anywhere.~~

Unfortunately, we do not have three of the major underlings, Himmler, Goebbels and Borman, but the rest of the group are on trial, and personality studies are easily available.

It is important to realize in the Nazi system that it was not set up as our Democracy is organized, but rather represents the end point in the development of a totalitarian state. Each individual was directly subordinate to Hitler, whose decision in all matters

was absolutely final, ^{who} On the other hand, each co-worker represented a secondary Fuehrer to those individuals below him in the system. Consequently, each one of the present defendants can be looked upon as a sort of little Hitler, an individual whose word was law, and who in Nazi Germany, controlled not only the function, but also the life of his subordinates.

Obviously, the most important personality in the hierarchy was Adolf Hitler. We will deal with ~~him first.~~ ^{Answer A}

Chapter A. Hitler
Adolph Hitler, ^{was without question a} make-up, must be considered as having been a

remarkable personality. ^{I use the past tense only} because - though he was reputed to fear death and ^{shot} a strong antipathy to suicide, ^{the opinion among his} because the current opinion, according to Hitler's ^{with whom I talked is that he is dead, and} closest friends, is that he is probably dead. ^{This} ^{what he killed himself.} The opinion seems plausible. ^{is the one question that is most frequently asked,} and since its answer yields some information as to

his personality, it will be dealt with first.

Of course, ^{It was well known that} Hitler, throughout his entire life, ^{had for many years} always demonstrated a definite fear of death. ^{After he came to complete power in Germany,} He spoke frequently ^{remarked} of the fact that he must work rapidly because ^{his} time was running short, and constantly forced his associates to work overtime in order that their tasks might be done in case something happened to him. ^{He lived with a gnawing fear} He ^{expressed to me} of the stomach, which

Coupled with
As will be seen later in this chapter, he was no more also had a morbid fear of death through cancer. ^{than a nervous} These fears of death were also ^{emphasized in his} belly ache.

It was a Hitlerian

intense dislike of any talk of suicide. He

~~had always stated~~ ^{He} had always stated that no one should commit suicide

because there was always ^{some} a way which could be

~~found to bring oneself back into a functioning~~

No one but a weakling or a fool ever would commit suicide, he had said.

position in life. However, after 1944, it was

noted by Hitler's associates that he was changing, ^{he was often}

his ideas, and he often stated that he could easily

understand how someone who ^{was} no longer found himself

to be healthy could kill himself. He was particularly

concerned with a paralysis and tremor of his left

hand and expressed the direct statement to his

associates that he had had the terrible thought

that this affliction might spread to his right hand.

He also stated that, if this happened, he would ~~take~~ ^{put}

an end to himself. ~~XXXXXXXXXXXXXX~~ He therefore

ⁱⁿ ~~that~~ Hitler ^{developing} towards the end, developing suicidal

and Hitler's ^{developing} towards the end, developing suicidal

Another factor, which Goering mentions as playing

a prominent part was the killing of Mussolini and

his mistress by his own people. Hitler secured

several pictures of Mussolini's battered body, and

became profoundly upset at what he termed the

degradation and humiliation of such an end. Goering

states that when Hitler saw Mussolini's body with

that of his mistress in the gutter, he ran shouting

up and down the halls, screaming, "This will never

happen to me." Several times in the next few weeks, Goering

Hitler spontaneously brought up this matter, and after

to before his carcase.

~~this, often stated~~ that he would never be taken alive, *and that no beaten German would have the opportunity,*

This ~~incident~~ ^{Hitler's} would explain his desire to suicide rather than risk capture in a last ditch defense. It also accounts for his orders to have his body and that of his mistress burned, to prevent their being found and later subjected to indignities similar to Mussolini.

Finally, in studying the events that led to Goering's fall from favor, ~~we find~~ ^{I ascertained} that Hitler discussed ^{Reb, Fock, Himmler, Goebbels and Borman} with several of his associates the idea of suicide during the week previous to April 30. His last testament states that "My wife and I choose to die in order to escape shame and overthrow or capitulation."

Psychologically, therefore, it is quite within the realm of possibility for Hitler to have committed suicide. That he had his body and that of Eva Braun cremated rather than preserved to be later buried in pomp by the German people is also reasonable in view of his fear of mutilation. I stress these facts because Hitler's basic personality, as will be seen, is of the paranoid hysterical type, which ordinarily makes only suicidal gestures and succeeds only by accident. In Hitler's case, however, the pressure towards the end must have been extreme, and we find gradually increasing trends towards an actual escape through suicide.

The ~~text of my introductory sentence~~ that Hitler was remarkable must be ^{admitted} ~~accepted~~ not only by the German people, who idealized him, but by those who were his bitterest enemies. Biographers in Germany have written endless ^{and worshipfully} ~~times~~ portraying his every good point, to a degree which approaches actual worship. On the other hand, ~~German~~ biographers who have ^{in this Gestapo, since outside} ~~escaped from~~ Germany ^{for the most} ~~have written~~ ^{part} emphasize ^{my} his weaknesses and peculiarities.

Some of these biographies have been carried to an extreme, and in them ~~we find~~ ^{is presented} Hitler an unstable, sexually perverted, intellectually inadequate, uneducated, domineering fool. It is obviously that such biographies ^{reflect} ~~are influenced~~ more by the personality pattern of the author than ~~they are~~ ^{from} the actual structure of Hitler's character.

If we are to ever understand why this physically unpretentious individual was able to totally control the lives of so many people, we must do ^{abandon our} ~~away with~~

^{Hitler's} ~~all~~ prejudices and concentrate on those facets of personality which served to influence an entire nation.

^{Hans} ~~Frank~~, in part of his unpublished autobiography ^{made him absolute ruler} ~~dealing with Adolph Hitler, states~~ ^{he} ~~he wrote in prison~~ "for my children so they may learn from my mistakes"

^{Said it thus:} "It ~~was~~ ^{is} not easy to explain how the fate of the whole Reich could have depended on an ordinary individual, a clod of petty and ephemeral flesh and blood like the rest of us."

~~He further adds:~~

"I believe that the figure of Adolph Hitler will remain as a vague nightmare in German memory, a page for future legends, ^{and these will} but legends tend to ^{he caused} forget clarity; the pain and suffering of contemporaries disappear in forgetfulness ^{will mislead} and ^{and glorify} elevate the personality of one man who had made the German people and the German nation his own willing private property, which he could command to his own liking."

This idea is a ⁹ ~~fearfully~~ accurate prognostication. ^{H, The Legend} ~~It can be rendered harmless, relatively only, if~~ and it is imperative that we see Adolph Hitler as he actually was, ^{keep all the world to} and that every effort be made to prevent the development of a Hitler Legend growing in strength throughout the years.

In order to portray Hitler ^{most objectively as a human} in his most human ^{organism,} fashion, let us, therefore, first look at him through the eyes of ^{the doctors who treated him.} his physicians. ^{The following is abstracted from the reports of his five physicians:} Physically, Hitler weighed about 150 lbs. and five feet nine inches in height was 176 centimetres tall. His skin was pale, and his physique generally unprepossessive.

Complete medical examinations were essentially normal and ^{the} usual medical procedures were generally negative. Towards the end of 1943, he developed some weakness of the left leg, and of the left arm, ^{in which} he also developed an increasing tremulousness. He was studied by a number of physicians, and ^{the symptoms were diagnosed as} it was felt that this was a hysterical reaction without actual nerve damage.

In the Spring of 1944, the tremor became so bad that Hitler was frequently unable to use his left hand,

and usually carried it held close to his body.

^{during this period Hitler}
At times ~~he~~ would become extremely upset by the constant shaking of his hand and would hold it still with his right hand. [Interestingly enough, one of his physicians states that whenever he was asked about it, the tremor would stop. After the attempt on Hitler's life in July, 1944, when his right leg and arm were bruised by the blast, his left hand recovered perfect functioning for about eight weeks. Then, as the right side returned to normalcy, the left side began ^{again} to get progressively worse, and during the winter of 1945, his left hand and arm seemed almost useless. [Aside from this hysterical reaction, Hitler presented no physical abnormalities of any type.

Hitler's personality is a much more difficult problem, and as one of his physicians puts it: "His psychic state was very complex."

In order to understand Hitler's reactions to life, we must give some brief consideration to his ^{youth and family} ~~developmental~~ background.

Hitler's father was apparently a somewhat unstable individual, who had married three times, possessed great ambition, and was extremely strict. Hitler at times commented on his father's firmness, and apparently ^{from it} developed ~~from his father's actions~~ a violent hatred of ~~towards~~ authority ~~of any type~~. [Hitler's mother, on the other hand, was a simple housekeeper, and Hitler frequently and respectfully spoke of her as a modest

and quiet woman, who lived only for her children.
She apparently was often afraid of the discipline
of her husband, who was harsh and unindulgent towards
his family. A great number of Hitler's biographies^{etc.}
have emphasized his firm attachment to his mother,
and have felt that Hitler suffered from an Oedipus
complex. This may well be, ^{When Hitler was 60000, his}
^{mother died.} and in Hitler's family
background, we find the earliest roots of his revolt
~~against authority and strict guidance.~~

^{Hitler's}
As part of ~~this revolt~~, after he had left Linz,
following the death of his mother, he went to Vienna
to live with an aunt. Here he had little supervision,
and ~~essentially had to make his own way.~~ ^{failed to qualify as a student of architecture,} He was
apparently lazy and his resentment of authority is
shown in his refusal to attend school or to work. He
developed during this period his strong feeling for
Germany and an intense ²hatred for Vienna, particularly
the Jewish ^{s of Vienna} ~~part.~~ ^{Hitler's} His political beliefs probably stem
from the fact that Linz, his hometown, was a ^{rural} city ^{of} in
~~the~~ German style, ^{quite unlike} in direct opposition to Vienna ^{during} under the
^{later} ~~the time of the Hapsburg monarchy.~~ Hitler, ~~and~~
developed much of this political mood in his childhood
days, must have bitterly resented being sent to ^{that, in}
Vienna, ^{he was an utter nobody for whom no one} where he was unrecognized, and where apparently
~~no one~~ showed any concern whatever ^{for him.} As a result,
we find him developing at this time his anti-semitic
tendencies and interest in the return of power to Germany.

particularly but verified
vouched for by Karl Brandt, his personal physician as well as by
virtually every person who ever worked with him,

he must have ^{been} had an intellectual capacity well
above average. His memory was apparently phenomenal.
Although he had not received a ^{good} ~~large~~ amount of
formal education, he read constantly in every
sphere and was apparently able not only to read
rapidly, but could retain and utilize information
so gained. His memory seems equally good for
happenings, persons, or abstract subjects. ~~one~~ Brandt
~~physician~~ states that during ten years' experience
with him, he never ^{caught} ~~found~~ him in a mistake of memory,
at any time, although the physician ^(claimed to have been) ~~was~~ (somewhat
skeptical of Hitler and ~~was~~ constantly checking ^{up} on
him in dictionaries and encyclopedias.

In the military field, Keitel ^{swore} ~~states~~ that
Hitler was a strategical genius. There is no doubt
but that ^{he was} ~~his~~ ^(in his enormous military) well-read library of nearly every book
known to military science, ~~contributed~~ ^{contributed} profoundly
to his knowledge in this field. His excellent
memory, ^{also} ~~impressed~~ ^(who told me that) Doentz ~~that~~ (Hitler was able to
give at any time complete descriptions with all
specifications of every type of naval craft. ~~The~~ Keitel, Jodl
~~Wehrmacht officers~~ were also ~~considerably~~ amazed
at this ability, ~~because~~ Hitler, in an off-hand way,
could ^(cite any) ~~give~~ information concerning any piece ~~of~~ Wehrmacht
ordinance, ^(giving) with all its specifications, ~~without~~ ^{from memory}
~~ever referring to a reference book.~~

~~he~~ ^{he} ~~can~~ ^{memory}. It can

, however, consisted in more than a marvelous

In addition, Hitler's intellectual ability ~~is shown also~~
in his great organizational capacity. He was apparently
a born organizer and had the rare ability to generally
place his followers ^{, generally} in the most acceptable and useful
position.

— and this is my own conclusion based on the testimony of his doctors, secretaries and ministers — Hitler

Finally, ~~he~~ had a profound sense of conviction in
his own ability, amounting to megalomania. He firmly
believed that he was the only individual who could lead
the Third Reich to success, and at times ^{he} seemed to ~~express~~
~~to feel~~ a feeling that he had been chosen by Heaven for ^{the} this task.
As a consequence ~~he was excessively~~
~~His beliefs gave him a complete intolerance of the ideas~~
~~which did not~~ of others unless they agreed specifically with his own. ^{in fact}
He could not tolerate competition in any sphere and would
become extremely upset when anyone argued with him. He
~~apparently realized the dominance of his personality and~~
~~frequently utilized it in brow-beating others to adapt his~~
way of thought.

~~Hitler's~~ ^{(was generally genial. He}
in his behaviour in a private circle, ~~however, he~~
was apparently ~~well adapted and~~ well liked by ^{his intimates for the usual} everyone.
~~He seemed possessed of kindness and cordiality~~ ^{other} and ~~was~~ ^{he}
especially friendly with children and older people. [He
had a great understanding for ^{the} little pleasures, and in his
dealings with women ~~displayed~~ ^{displayed} a very positive charm.
Everyone who discusses this point ^{with me} mentions ^{ed of} this behaviour
like "a Viennese Gentleman" ^{German character} — a ~~term~~ ^{ing} similar to our
"Southern Gentleman". This behaviour not only included
the usual social amenities, but an exaggeration of grace,

^{for instance,}
and Hitler made it a point to kiss the hand of any woman
to whom he was introduced. He apparently liked to be with
women and ^{often demanded with a minimum of} preferred, often without the required tact, ^{that}
^{have} the most beautiful and interesting ones ^(sit beside) with him. His
Hitler's ideal of woman was a creature of
ideas on women were that they should be beautiful and in-
telligent for amusement ^(of men) at parties and dances. He felt, however,
^(women's) that they should not be particularly intelligent along
political lines; and ^{he} often said that, so far as he personally
was concerned, he was not interested in women who had
original ideas because he himself "had" enough ideas for both."

^{Brandt observed that Hitler sometimes}
~~When he was with women, he became at times almost~~
coquettish, ^{he} according to observers, but apparently derived
considerable pleasure from their presence. ^{Curiously, according to}
^{Brandt who knew her well,} Along these lines his relationship to Eva Braun is of considerable
interest. She is described as being pretty, and intelligent
and extremely energetic. ^{— was} Actually, she seems to have been
somewhat masculine in nature. ^{She} dressed most often in sport
clothes and ^{her interests were} was interested primarily in swimming, skiing,
and mountain climbing. ^{Brandt described} Her character is described as
being harsh rather than woman-like or soft. Hitler's
^{his acknowledged sweetheart and mistress} failure to marry ~~her~~ until the last days of his life has
been provocative of much comment. ^{had} The ^{explanation, it seems, was} general feeling in
Germany was that they were not married because it was
believed that such a marriage would cause a loss of a

-15-
political and displays an unguessed anxiety on Hitler's
part lest he lose even ^(financial) support
^{sexually-initiated}

Both Goering and Schirach, who had a part in the decision against marriage agreed that it was based on the feeling that an unmarried Hitler had a greater appeal for German women folk than a married Fuehrer. ^{they said, agreed}

great number of his female followers. Hitler felt that the women in Germany would ^{remain} be more strongly attached to him in his single status. This idea was apparently strongly shared by Goebbels who made the most of it in his ^{Hitler} publicity propaganda.

Sexuality > In spite of his superiority feelings, Hitler suffered from very definite neurotic reactions. One of these ^{as} has been indicated, ^{was} previously in his inability to accept any opinion but his own. He was completely incapable of accepting anything from anyone unless it agreed with his personal feelings. According to ^{Dr. Brandt again} one of his physicians, "This 'be-right' attitude

was followed by an absolute wanting-to-be-right attitude." ^{On the basis of the scores of sources I investigated, I feel safe in saying that} He can best be described as an individual who hated people who knew more than he did, tolerated those who knew as much, and ^{often} simply adored those who knew less. ^{Hitler was a well-informed man who}

Doubtless ^{his} early political and military successes achieved by following Hitler's thoughts and plans ^{for him} furnished convincing evidence for the correctness of his assertions. ^{when} ^{red or a} ^{was} ^{found it easy to believe} a failure occurred, a mistake was made, it was, according to Adolf Hitler ^{one else} his own conception, never his fault, but always the fault of some representative or operator who had failed in his mission. During the years ^{his} ^{as Fuehrer} Hitler became more and more possessed with this idea. This reaction is typical in individuals who feel inner insecurity.

^{also} Such feelings in Hitler ^{gave evidence of this same feeling. He} were particularly predominant in social matters. ^{above the platform} Hitler was extremely painstaking in his social manners because he felt the inadequacy of his early

According to his two secretaries,

play the role of

he was to ~~be~~ ^{do}

training. Whenever a social event was planned, he ^{nervously} personally supervised and checked all preparations, and whenever such an ^{the event} ~~was over~~ affair came to a close, he would frequently ^{seek reassurance from} remark to his ^{his household or official staff} ~~followers~~ that he ^{that he} had given "a good show" and a demonstration of any performance.

reaction toward social adventures increased as time went on. Even after This attitude increased as time went on and frequently before becoming the Führer who could do no wrong, Hitler would mutter while planning some affair: "I'll a social event, he would state that he would 'show them that

he know as much as they did about such matters."

As a further ^{do} example of his sensitivity is found in his sudden ^{stalling away} ~~departure~~ from a supper given at the Castle in Naples, when ^{the table at a party} ~~the explanation was that, during the~~ meal ^{and purpose of nervous} ~~(or discussion arose)~~ an argument as to type of formal ^{costumes} ~~dress arose~~. Hitler

believed that the King and his Court deliberately brought ^{the subject to show off Hitler's ignorance and} up this discussion in order to embarrass him socially.

These feelings of inferiority can undoubtedly be traced back to the inadequacies of Hitler's early life and ^{the} ~~his frequent~~ frustrations during his developmental period. ^{years in Vienna} ~~years in Vienna~~ In ^{he developed} ~~he developed~~ an over-compensation which resulted in a refusal to accept counsel or opinions from others. ^{another compensatory device was} ~~He~~ would surround himself with intelligent people and then ^{to} ~~com-~~ astound ^{superior} ~~com-~~ pletely surprise them with his tremendous knowledge, thus forcing them to follow his conversation, rather than accepting ^{So long as the device worked Hitler} ~~any ideas from them~~ a calm conversationalist, but if a discussion seemed to be getting away from him, he would be ^{come more and more} ~~come more and more~~ outspoken and his voice would become ^{rise until he was} ~~loud~~, out-shouting all other voices. The rumor that he had occasional outbursts of rage is undoubtedly true, but the idea that such rages

and I questioned virtually everyone we could lay military-police hands on who might have known.

resulted in carpet-eating, tearing the curtains, etc., have never been verified by any of his physicians or by his closest associates. He would ~~at these times~~, however, brook no interruptions at such a time. ~~the angry Hitler was a determined developer of conversations into a monologue, and this habit was even true in his personal life.~~

Even in friendly discussions, ~~his conversation easily became~~ ^{Hitler frequently held the floor and} ~~and he did not relish any comment more constructive than "yes."~~ ^{repetitious and he would brook no interference.} ~~Schrach, recalling the~~ ^{early days of his youth movement,} ~~told me of one day~~ ^{Goering, Goebbels} ~~relates an incident when he and several others were discuss-~~ ^{ing general problems, and he had the temerity to introduce} ~~a suggestion.~~ ^{Several of Hitler's colleagues indicated to} ~~him to desist, and after the discussion both Goebbels and~~ ^{Goering explained that it would be better if he made these} ~~suggestions to one of them after the Fuehrer had finished~~ ^{talking and broken up} ~~the meeting.~~

In addition to these feelings of inadequacy, Hitler ^{exhibited} ~~presented~~ other signs of definite neurotic reactions. He suffered from a large number of phobias and compulsions. He had a marked fear of death and because of ^{up to five} ~~this fear~~ had numerous physicians in constant attendance. He consistently refused to allow anyone ^{of whom to give him} ~~to make~~ a comprehensive examination of him. He ~~submitted to routine laboratory tests but would~~ ^{hardly} ~~never permit X-rays because he felt that they might reveal~~ ^{an incurable cancer.} He would never touch an animal unless he was wearing gloves. On those occasions when he carressed his dog without gloves he would immediately leave and wash his hands many times. ~~His reactions to horses is well known.~~ ^{He could not abide the presence, or proximity, the} ~~straight, of horses.~~

He was apparently fascinated by, least fearful of, horses.

He surrounded himself with pictures and tapestries of the finest stallions but ~~unlike most other European rulers,~~ refused adamantly to do any actual riding.

His personal life, while extremely simple, indicates strong persistence of habits. He was extremely clean, bathed frequently and ^{offered} ~~gave~~ to his physician as ^{his} ~~the~~ reason for being a vegetarian ~~the statement that eating meat made~~ ^{which poured off him during speeches and} his perspiration ^{smell} ~~badly~~. ~~Since he apparently perspired~~ ^{so much} ~~profusely during his speeches, Hitler stated that this was~~ ^{the main reason for adopting vegetarian principles.} He did not drink and gave up smoking during his student days in Vienna. ^{in fact, he came to} ~~He disliked tobacco to such a degree that no~~ ^{so much} ~~smoking was permitted in his presence and he frequently~~ commented upon the disagreeable odor of those who ~~still~~ ^{had a faint} ~~had~~ ^{of} tobacco smoke on their clothes.

His daily routines were strict and ~~had to be~~ followed ^(Both his secretaries agreed on this -) to the minutest degree. Whenever he ~~had taken a walk, only~~ ^{took} ~~this very walk would be repeated.~~ ^{it was when} ~~feasible~~ ^{always the} ~~same~~ ^{(same) (he had taken before)} If he took his dog across a field and threw a piece of wood for the dog to retrieve, the next day he would throw the piece from exactly the same spot and in the same direction. ^{Each day} ~~The dog had to sit down~~ ^{at the same} ~~at this spot until he was again called by his master.~~ ^{Hitler to retrieve the stick.} ~~Such~~ ^{that exact} ~~a procedure would be repeated day after day until the animal~~ finally would go through the routine without a word from his master.

At his home in Berchtesgaden, Hitler had a small

courtyard and when walking therein always walked precisely the same number of steps along the same path day after day. Any attempt to ^(persuade him to deviate from the pattern) produce ~~deviation~~ resulted in considerable agitation and anger on his part.

He was extremely concerned over his clothing and his linen. They had to be spotless. If at any time, for example, he got a spot on his collar he would immediately bathe and change all of his clothing, including his underwear. He avoided everything of a soiling nature, washing his hands numerous times during the day and cleaning his teeth immediately after eating anything.

In addition, he paid a tremendous amount of attention to his own body. For ~~the past~~ twenty years he ~~suffered~~ from complaints of the gastro-intestinal tract, primarily ~~manifested by~~ stomach pains and gas. His digestion and digestive control played an important part in his life and usually was the topic of long table conversations. Examinations never revealed any actual organic disease and it was the ^{consensus} ~~of opinion~~ of all his physicians that he suffered from a gastric neurosis.

In the course of time, tremendous amounts of medicine were tried, appraised and ultimately rejected. Hitler was constantly calling in new physicians and usually had one or two in continuous attendance, almost always inviting them to meals so that he could discuss the effect of this of that food upon his stomach. Some of these physicians

utilized amazing amounts of medication and in his last year or so Hitler received constant injections throughout the day at the rate of about one every two hours or so. Whenever he would be given a new drug which he felt helped him, he would ~~procure~~^{order} tremendous amounts of ~~this drug~~^{stocked for his personal use,} and then proceed to take it regularly for days, weeks, months, and even years, whether it was recommended to be so taken by the physician or not. Whenever he went on a trip, he carried great quantities of medicines with him; and if any specific remedy was forgotten, it resulted in a minor affair of state.

In addition, Hitler was so frightened of being in an accident that ~~one of his physicians~~^{usually Dr. Brandt} accompanied him on every trip with a completely equipped emergency surgical outfit. In this way Hitler was assured of the best possible care should anything happen at any time.

During the last few years of his life, Hitler developed what ~~one of his physicians~~^{Dr. Brandt} describes as an actual addiction to medicines. While he never took any type of opiate or narcotic, he certainly did rely upon injections of glucose and vitamins which were given to him ^{at the end} sometimes hourly. Most of the medicines ~~which were employed~~ were stimulants ~~in nature~~ and it is quite possible that this constant overstimulation accounts for the small amount of sleep which he required.

Hitler was also ~~basically~~^{profoundly} suspicious of almost everyone and set up very elaborate systems of checking even on his

closest associates. After the assassination attempt on July 20, 1944, he became ^{even more} profoundly suspicious, refusing to see anyone but his most intimate friends and apparently ^{fully} trusting ^{not even them} ~~no one~~.

According to ^{all} his physicians, he ^{had an} possessed a sense of unswerving belief in Providence, ^{in his fall: Schirach told me how,} and the ^{fact that help} would always come to him on any occasion. ^{the morning} After the death of President Roosevelt, ^{Hitler greeted him with gleaming countenance and} he pointed out that this was an act of Divine Providence for his special benefit. He also felt that this Providence ^{had} was connected with his being called as ^{him to be} the saviour of his country and ^{that it supported} the ~~basic reason~~ for his ~~always being right in any decision~~. The early success of his decisions convinced him of this, and he became increasingly convinced of his own greatness. Towards the end, this approached a messiah-like complex. There seems to be little doubt ^(until the very end) but that he honestly believed that he had been chosen by Divine Power for his task.

^{in the manuscript quoted on page 002} Frank, ^(says of) in his discussion of Hitler points to this megalomania by stating:

"What was Adolf Hitler [?] a statesman [?], but he formally stripped the State of its important essential institutions such as legal rights, a constitution, administration and finally destroyed the Reich with regard to its foreign policy and by war? [?] was he a party man, but he systematically undermined his own party program, devalued its ideas and made

were real personality assets.
effect, are constantly mentioned and he had apparently learned the knack of actually staring down ~~any~~ opposition. *(on women, of course, he lavished his "southern")*
~~His extreme charm and friendliness to women has previously~~
~~and the general run of men he impressed,~~
~~been mentioned, and finally, he was able to impress most~~
~~of his followers who were in general not particularly~~
well educated *(with his "knowledge" by a spectacular display*
of superficial information and memory feats which they
interpreted as true education and brilliance.

(person I talked to) Almost everyone emphasized *(Hitler's)* his modest private life.

Though he could ~~He would have~~ obviously been able to choose any ~~personal~~

he fancied ~~surroundings which would suit him, but~~ limited himself primarily to simple things. ~~This type of living was~~

~~extremely fortunate during his early days, and~~ his ability to go long periods without eating, possibly a residue from *Langover*

his starvation days in Vienna, used to give his employees frequent stomach aches. He usually surrounded himself

When he did eat, it was usually ~~with the simplest sort of atmosphere and during his meal~~

~~times usually carried on a conversation with his adjutants~~
and business continued right through the meal.
~~and secretaries,~~ He liked to have all the people around

him and immediately noticed whenever any official or employee was missing. This little habit resulted in no

one having any free time, ~~and~~ *particularly* the married men in saw almost nothing of their families. Hitler occasionally would happen to think of this problem and would then invite the wives to a sort of family dinner.

Apparently his only luxury was the possession of beautiful, modern and extremely speedy automobiles. Although he did not drive, he loved to travel and was quite interested in the actual mechanics of his vehicles. He also liked to collect art objects and paintings for his home and this hobby became particularly evident when he introduced the systematic plunder of the occupied countries.

My inquiries convinced me that Hitler was
~~He was apparently~~ quite loyal to those who had been with him in the early years ^{of the party} and ^{he} gave most of them positions as rewards ^(of friendship). Apparently he overdid this ~~gravy-train racket~~ and frequently kept people in positions ^{of power} although ^{who} they obviously did not have the ^{requisite} necessary abilities. Hitler seemed to see each loyal follower who had stuck to him through good and bad as one who must be rewarded. He could not seem to understand that others did not hold this viewpoint but were more realistic.

He was extremely friendly with his old party members and if anyone in his immediate circle became ill, he would call in physicians and follow their progress frequently hour by hour.

He worked usually by night and this peculiar habit accounts for the fact that most of Germany's momentous decisions were released during the early morning hours.

~~His attitude towards his co-workers was usually friendly.~~

His relationship to Goering was one of the closest ~~Hitler's secretaries~~ *and remember as being able to joke* and Goering was one of the few who could successfully

^{by their testimony and his own}
^{was}
~~Joke~~ with the Fuehrer. Goering ^{was} also ~~was~~ undoubtedly the only member of the inner circle who actually dared to present contrary ideas. Keitel and von Ribbentrop were frequently spoken of by Hitler as the faithful executors of his commands. Borman and Hess who actually had the closest personal relationships with the Fuehrer were apparently quite passive to his demands and ran his errands willy-nilly.

Hitler read a great deal and developed an ability to skim books and yet absorb their contents. His library of some 16,000 volumes was devoted primarily to technical books about war, biographies, architecture and painting, natural history and a fair proportion of ordinary cheap novels. He was extremely attached to ^{the writings of} ~~the poet and writer,~~ Deitrich Eckhardt, who was also one of ^{his} ~~Hitler's~~ closest personal friends.

Hitler almost never listened to the radio but had records made from Richard Wagner's operas and played these constantly in his quarters. His enthusiasm for Wagner's music remained constantly ~~high~~ throughout the years.

In painting, he had a preference for Machhardt, several of whose portraits he acquired. Hitler also encouraged many of the young contemporary painters and while he felt that moderns did not approach the abilities of the older painters, he wished talent to be encouraged.

During the years of Hitler's development he seemed to undergo some personality change. In the early phases when he was recruiting his party and leading the Munich putsch, he was apparently a friendly and much more humane type of individual. During the years, 1933 to 1939, he became extremely energetic and business-like but still maintained his relationships with his associates. After the war began he became increasingly suspicious and after the ^{ass}assination on the 20th of July, 1944, developed ~~frank~~ ^{mental} ~~outright~~ abnormalities.

Schirach describes these three phases of his life - the first one, "the human phase"; the second period, during which Hitler was concerned with the rebuilding of Germany, as "the super-human phase"; and the last period, during which time Hitler developed the concentration camps and showed his cruel and sadistic nature, as "the inhuman phase". ^{gave it as her opinion}

After the ^{ass}assination attempt, Hitler was suspicious of even his closest followers. ^{His} ~~the~~ ^{Franklin Wolfe} secretary ~~states that~~ ^{she felt} that he was ~~somehow~~ broken up inside. Even though he still held himself erect, he gave the impression of a much older man than he actually was. ~~The nervous trembling which had been present in his left hand and leg temporarily cleared. Immediately following the explosion,~~ ^{At tonight's} ~~he suffered marked weakness of his right hand and leg from the blast and as this cleared his left hand again resumed~~ ^{period in which}

✓ ^{steadily} ~~became~~ ^{hand} ~~usable~~ while his right ^{hand} was unusable, the left hand ~~again resumed~~

its weakness and tremor. ^{and, in time, became worse} As this continued to progress, ^{than before, so that} he sometimes used his right hand to hold his left hand ^{it still} so that the shaking would not be discernible. He refused ^{more than a few hours a day} to take rest ~~for himself.~~ His walk became ~~more~~ uncertain and he obviously was failing physically.

Hitler's ^{hysterical evaluation of the} opinion of the whole situation was that, since he had ^{survived} continued to live in spite of the ^{ass} assassination attempt, this constituted a sign from heaven and he must, therefore, ^{mean him to} go ahead ^{with} and carry out the ^{work} ~~task~~ for which he had been chosen.

This reaction accounts to a large degree for his absolute refusal to consider surrender although his armies were obviously beaten on all sides. During this period the air attacks were being stepped up in frequency and in force, ^(according to Franklin D. Roosevelt) but Hitler ^{apparently} completely lost interest in them.

Whereas early in the war he had often visited bombed areas and ^{spoken} ~~had~~ had sympathetic ^{ally to} words for the bereaved families, ^{bombing} ~~casualties~~ ^{they} did not seem to bother him any more. He did not worry about the German people and became interested only in danger to industry and military installations. He became increasingly hard and his staff often heard statements such as "men who would master the general fate must become used to being hard no matter how difficult this may be". He increasingly avoided themes unpleasant to him, ^{and speaking and others felt how he} ~~and ignored~~ the overall damage to Germany by simply having the curtains of his car drawn whenever he drove throughout ~~the~~ bombed-out cities.

probably with the aid of suggestions from Goebbels and ^{He succeeded,} Bormann, who were the only old, original Nazis still with him. Though Bormann was the work horse type, it seems that even he shared the all-consuming hunger for power that characterizes the better-known members of the hierarchy. At a time when Hitler forecast no man further ~~than~~ out of sight, he wrote his final

The Russians Took

After East Prussia had surrendered, his activity increased. He took frequent injections of stimulants and grape sugar, attended conference after conference and slept hardly at all. He finally worked himself into a suspicious lather. When he prepared his last testament, he threw out ^{ignoring or making for death} of the party most of his old supporters, ^{and leaving only} ~~ignoring or~~ Goebbels and Bormann in positions of control, ^{marking for death those who had been with him the longest.}

Thus we see Adolf Hitler reaching the end of his tether, a neurotic, suspicious individual, unable to sleep, unable to accomplish anything to save even the last vestige of his ^{vision} ~~dream~~, driven to despair, and finally ^{death} ~~dying~~ by his own hand.

Perhaps one of the most intimate and clearest views of the Fushrer is given by ^{Christa Schroeder,} one of his personal secretaries. Following is a summary of her characterization of ^{Hitler.} →

"It is probably assumed that Hitler's secretaries had to do continuous jobs for him and thereby were enabled to gain insight into the most varied operations. This was not the case. I therefore consider it necessary to start out with an explanation of the sort of things that Hitler's secretaries were required to do.

"In the years before the war they had their particular sphere of work in his private office, where only work of a general nature was done. Hitler received all important or secret letters,

Fraulein Schroeder was a motherly, maiden female in her late forties. Of medium height, stocky, shaggy, non-Nordic in appearance, she had been with Hitler eight years and knew him well. Brilliant, an indefatigable worker, she readily told all she knew — or would admit to herself — about Hitler. To her, however, even when the evidence of his brutality became known, he remained a hero. Her comments, consequently, though frank are those of a person who refused to see anything but greatness in Adolf Hitler.

Other evidence of his paranoid and persecution patterns was

every nation and people ^{was} were persecuting him, and his projection on to other ~~peoples~~ of the blame for anything ^{un}toward that happened in the Third Reich.

~~In flatter terms,~~
~~Such a summary indicates that~~ Hitler was an abnormal and a mentally ill individual, ~~and yet~~ ^{though} it is obvious that his deviations, although marked, were not of a nature ^{which} in the average individual would seriously attract the attention of others. ~~Constantly~~ he was able, ~~to carry on~~ and by his drive, his intelligence, his ability at handling people, ~~he~~ ^{to} reached ^{in the end,} a position where his pathological deviations could function to a degree to ~~cause the disruption of~~ the entire civilized world.

and almost destroy

relatively mild

Ch. I History & Origin & Bldg Dir?

CHAPTER II. THE POLICY FORMERS

But
The Nazi party, faithfully following the ancient German system ^{recipe for} of an "elite class", developed ^{class} a series of officers directly subservient to Hitler and acting as his advisors + (in so far as anyone dared) ^{advise} a temperamental character like the Fuehrer. Actually while many men held positions of long title - nearly everyone had to have some sort of a title - ^{Not all of this elite class were policy makers.} the men who actually were important in the policies and affairs of state were few. Two of these, Goebbels and Himmler, ^{committed suicide and were never tried.} are dead. Of the lot ^{that stood side} on trial only Goering, Rosenberg, and Hess ^{were} represent real influences in Hitler's inner circle. These three men ^{were} actually built up parts of Hitler's basic theories, ^{that stood side} Rosenberg and Hess in ^{the 1920's and early '30's} his early life and Goering ^{after} as the party came to power. ^{responsible for}

Probably no historical figure has ever been the subject of as much publicity and wild guessing as was the deputy of Adolf Hitler, Rudolf Hess. Hess' role in German history was essentially clear-cut and simple until the 10th of May, 1941, when he ^{botched} complicated it completely by his dramatic flight to England. Since that time, practically every intelligent individual in the world has at some time or other speculated on the personality of this individual and the reasons for his flight. His actions are logical and understandable only after a study of his basic ^{psychic} structure.

Hess was born in Alexandria ^{Egypt} on the 26th of April, 1896, and was educated by a private tutor until the age of 15 when he was sent to Germany to complete his studies. Here

1 Hess
Because he had had a psychotic episode while under detention by the British and because I wanted to clear his mind and keep him in shape for trial, I spent hours at a time, for weeks on end, in his cell. Though he spoke ~~good~~ ^{most} English ~~much~~ well and answered questions quite readily, I never succeeded in getting ~~him~~ to be friendly. He was almost constantly on guard, aloof, clicking his heels and saluting. One day when the question of his treatment came up he ~~spoke~~ explained his attitude. "You are kind, yes. But I do not know if you are a friend. I shall wait until the trial is finished. Then I will know if you are a friend or not a friend."

Though not a while I was under my care, ~~crazy~~ He could not be called a normal person. He had left Germany at a time when the Reich was potentially master of the world. His tender mind simply would not accept ~~He had no conception of~~ the magnitude of its defeat and he insisted upon ~~regarding himself~~ ^{childish play about} ~~always as the deputy of~~ ^a ~~the~~ ^{who was more of} ~~Duehrer~~ ^{The answering} of personal questions he regarded as beneath his austere dignity.

Gen. Karl

(the famous German professor of Geopolitics)

he met Haushofer who acted as a sort of second father to him. Hess took a commercial course in anticipation of returning to his father's ^(import-export business) organization in Alexandria.

When the World War began, he joined immediately as a member of the same regiment to which Hitler belonged. Apparently he did not meet Hitler at this time and eventually left the regiment after he had recovered from a chest wound in 1917. ^(as) At the end of the war, ^(nearly) he became interested in aviation and had just become a flier ^(capabilities ceased) when the war ended.

Following the defeat, he drifted into Munich where he ^(took part in the hoodlums?) became interested in an anti-Semitic group and ^(Here he again came under the influence?) during one street fight was wounded in the leg. He ^(professors) located his old friend, Haushofer, and eventually became a member of the Nazi Party through his influence. He ~~soon became very close to Hitler.~~

Hess was an outstanding member of the early ^{Nazi} fighting group and suffered various injuries in many brawls. In the putsch of November 9, 1923, he played an important role, being assigned to seize several Bavarian leaders as hostages. When the putsch failed, Hess escaped temporarily into Austria but later returned to Germany and was sentenced to prison, being confined ~~coincidentally~~ to the Langburg Fortress ^{Hitler was also imprisoned} where he ~~again contacted his old leaders.~~

Here Hess served as Adolf Hitler's secretary, ^(writing taking) down the dictation of "Mein Kampf" and, together with Rosenberg, undoubtedly contributed ^(ing of his own) many ideas to this ~~Sacred~~ Nazi bible. He became a close confidant of Adolf Hitler and eventually

became deputy of the Fuehrer. Throughout his entire political life ~~he~~^{Hess} was Hitler's staunchest supporter, constantly demanding whole-hearted support from other Nazis. His ^{service to} activity ~~with~~ Hitler consisted in acting for the Fuehrer partly as secretary and partly as ~~Hitler's~~ deputy at minor state affairs. Many of his collaborators comment on this second-rate position and state that Hess' principal duty was to act simply as second to Adolf Hitler. Hess developed some antagonism to Goering during this period as he competed with Goering in the aviation field and always came off second best. Throughout his entire political life, ^{in fact,} ~~there-~~fore, we find Rudolf Hess ^{ran} running a good second, but always second, to somebody else in the Nazi Party.

His personal life was remarkably quiet, ^{and} in a group characterized by ^{hedonism,} ~~high living,~~ Hess was outstanding for his lack of bad habits. He was an extremely hard worker and everything about his office was well organized. He demanded a tremendous amount of work from his associates and was particularly concerned whenever he had to make a speech. ^{and His sec, all} ~~One~~ ^{Bednorz, May 12, 1941} of his associates states, "Whenever Hess had to talk in public, he almost 'sweat blood'". ² ~~Franklin Faith corroborated this observation,~~

Hess was tremendously enthusiastic about the ideals of the party and was carried away by the organization with its uniforms, ^{and} ~~its~~ parades, its bands and ~~its~~ spectacles. He apparently actually believed in the Nazi theories and worshipped Adolf Hitler as a god. We find Hess ^{one} becoming more

↳ Much of what follows I learned first from
Hildegard Fath, his private secretary. Like
Hildegard Fath and Schroeder, Hitler's aide,
female aide, she had been selected not for
beauty but ability. Short, unprepossessing,
but a woman of marked intellectual ability,
she was a loyal friend as well as co-worker.

His personal life was remarkably and of course his
characterized by discipline. There was outstanding for his

lack of bad habits. He was an extremely hard worker and
everything about his office was well organized. He demanded
a tremendous amount of work from his associates and was per-
sistently demanding. He had to make a decision. He
had to make a decision. He had to make a decision.

He was a tremendously enthusiastic about the ideals of
the party and was carried away by the organization with the
enthusiasm and parades, the bands and the spectacles. He

apparently actually believed in the Nazi theories and sor-
tipped Adolf Hitler as a god. He had been becoming more

of a mystic

and more attached ^{to} and dependent on the Fuehrer and ~~Hitler~~ ^{who assumed the role}
~~assuming a role of father to his deputy.~~ ^(in the eyes of)

Throughout his entire life Hess suffered many physical complaints which obviously ~~were not organically determined~~ but were psychological in origin. He went from doctor to doctor trying all sorts of cures and if a result was not achieved in a week or two, he would immediately seek a new doctor. Finally he lost confidence in the medical profession and resorted to quacks, nature healers and, ~~eventually~~ ^{eventually}, astrologers. He ~~became preoccupied with his health and established~~ the "Rudolf Hess Hospital", an organization designed to try cures which were not recognized by the medical profession. ^(his own searches for cures) All of ~~these attempts~~ ^{his own searches for cures} were apparently ~~useless~~ ^{fruitless} since Hess' physical complaints, primarily of pain in his stomach, ^{were never cured} ~~continued throughout his entire period in Germany.~~ ^{to the end} His health gradually became worse and during the last years of his activity he lost considerable weight. ^(a) ~~He was~~ ^{man, he seldom} ~~always~~ ^{ed} polite and chivalrous, ~~never~~ ^{never} expressing anger towards anyone, ^{but} ~~he~~ ^{he} always "swallowed his ~~anger~~ ^{ire}" and buried his annoyance within himself. (24)

^{As} ~~Towards the end of 1940,~~ ^{Hess} his determination and drive seemed to burn out and he frequently spent long periods at his desk ~~day-dreaming or gazing into space.~~ In addition, he was extremely suspicious of his colleagues, probably deriving this attitude from Adolf Hitler. ^{was an ardent} ~~He at all times~~ believed ⁱⁿ in astrology ^{and} and all of the high Nazis stress (5)

the fact that it was Rudolf Hess and not Hitler who collected horoscopes and followed their prognostications regarding German affairs.

tr → By 1940, he ^{was} therefore ~~find~~ ^{was} Rudolf Hess in 1940 in a state of mind bordering on a severe neurotic break-down. ^(From his history, it was obvious that Hess was a) He obviously has a basic psychopathic personality with marked hysterical bodily symptoms and fundamental ^(and probably other) paranoid trends.)

His gnevous mental state can probably be traced to his discovery

After the Polish war began, Hess undoubtedly discovered ^(that) his father-substitute, ~~was not the greatest living human as he had believed but that Hitler was undoubtedly~~ ^{not a God but)} also a cruel and violent person. This must have ^{been deeply} disturbed ^{ing to Hess'} the tender mind of Hess and his decision to fly to England probably was based partially on an effort to escape from his cruel father-substitute.

Private
In addition, he had always come off second-best in whatever he had undertaken and he must have frequently day-dreamed about some time becoming the number one man in Germany. He deplored the cruel bombings both of the Germans and of the English and undoubtedly genuinely felt that the person who brought about a ^{an end} ~~cessation~~ of this war would be ~~considered as~~ the world's greatest humanitarian. Also, this war, England against Germany, was the direct opposite of Haushofer's old concept, very dear to Hess, of a united England and Germany fighting Russia.

Finally, in late 1940, an astrologer indicated that Hess was the one who would bring about peace, and Haushofer

in a discussion with Hess mentioned a dream in which he saw Hess in England bringing about peace between the two great nations and the world. Hess in his childish adolescence ^{thought} must have pondered deeply on these thoughts and finally achieved the momentous idea of flying to England for dealings with the English. His immaturity of thought is evidenced in his belief that by simply contacting the English people he could easily bring about a solution of the war.

^{had me he} Hess made three attempts to fly to England but was turned back ^{twice by bad} because of weather. Finally, on the 10th of May, 1941 he was successful and arrived in ^{England} after parachuting from a height of 20,000 ft. He was dressed in the uniform of a Captain of the German Air Force and gave the name of Alfred Horn, stating he was on a special mission to the Duke of Hamilton whom he had selected because Haushofer had told him that Hamilton was an Englishman who would understand the German point of view.

Hess was held a prisoner by the English ^{claim to} and his attempts ^{at plenipotentiary's status were laughed at} for peace, which were obviously outlandish, were not considered. ^{Based on} ^{assumption} he based his entire hopes on the theory that the English regarded themselves as certain to be defeated ^{people did not wish to be defeated by Germany}. He offered ^{ridiculously one-sided terms} a series of totally pro-German conditions under which

Germany would ^{re} maintain all of its conquered territories, repossess its ex-German colonies ^{and} be free to conduct any type of armed aggression against Russia ^{and} in exchange ^{Germany} would ^{magnanimously} yield England a free hand in its own Empire, ~~a series of~~

~~conditions which obviously the British Nation did not feel free to consider.~~ Hess also added that, since the Churchill government was definitely anti-German, an entirely new government would have to be selected.

Hess was held as a prisoner of war from the date of his arrival until the 10th of October, 1945. During this period, ^{he} became at first depressed over the failure of his mission and later developed ~~a~~ definite ^{insanity} ~~insane~~ type of ~~re-~~ ^{delusions} ~~action~~, characterized by ~~false~~ beliefs, that the English people were poisoning his food in an attempt either to kill him or make him lose his mind. He made two ^{attempts at} ~~suicidal~~ ~~attempts~~ while a prisoner in England and during one phase of his ^{insanity} ~~stay~~ developed a total amnesia. His psychotic reactions cleared with the development of the amnesia, and in the spring of 1945 the amnesia itself also disappeared. At this time he stated he wrote a letter claiming that his amnesia was entirely false, but observations of the British psychiatrists indicated that ^{much} ~~a large percent~~ of it was undoubtedly real. This ^{refusal} ~~inability~~ of an individual to admit that anything has gone wrong with ^{one's} ~~his~~ mind is ~~a~~ very common ~~finding~~ in a great number of people who have been hospitalized for one reason or another. Very frequently people who have been ~~formerly~~ insane, on recovery, will state that all of their symptoms ^{had been} ~~were~~ mere pretense. This mechanism protects their ego ^{and} ~~and~~ permits ^{them} ~~them~~ to scoff at the fact that they could ever have lost ^{his} ~~the function of~~ their minds.

like this pattern,
Hess falls into this category and his denials were simply
a refusal to recognize
~~merely represent a defense~~ that he, Rudolf Hess, *a deputy to*
~~successor of the Fuehrer~~, could at any time have not been
in full control of his faculties.

Rudolf Hess arrived at the Nuremberg Jail late in the evening of October 10, 1945. On his arrival he was met by the Commandant ^{that} who explained the prison regulations ^{required} to him. ~~These regulations include~~ the removal of all personal possessions. At this point, Hess ~~became~~ *objected violently, fuming somewhat excited,* stated that he was a prisoner of war and a ranking Nazi officer, and demanded that all his personal possessions be placed with him in his cell.

The Commandant, Col. B. C. Andrus, patiently re-explained the rules and Hess finally ~~relinquished~~ ^{everything} *agreed to* ~~with the exception of a number of packages of what~~ appeared to be documents and small parcels. Hess insisted that these parcels contained material for his defense, including drugs and food which he had brought from England for chemical analysis by an impartial chemist. He offered to permit a guard to remain in his cell twenty-four hours a day, providing these items could be left with him.

Colonel Andrus *Finally impressed upon him*
~~it was pointed out to Hess at this time~~ that his rights and privileges were no different from those of any other German prisoner and that his precious parcels would be sealed and locked in the presence of witnesses.

which was to be his home for more than
a year.

Hess finally accepted this ultimatum and was escorted to the cell where he ~~had~~ remained during the trial.

His luggage, including his various bundles, were locked up and were not opened until later during interrogation, and while in his presence.

Physical examination on arrival showed Hess to be in good physical health except for some obvious weight loss.

(on his arrival at the jail.)
Psychiatrically, Hess was alert and responsive. His approach ^{was} ~~and~~ general attitude ^{was} ~~was~~ reserved and formal, but he gave the impression of making an attempt at real cooperation. His stream of thought was curtailed by his alleged memory deficit and the majority of his responses consisted simply of "I do not know. I cannot remember." This was particularly true when he was being admitted to the prison and his basic history was taken. *(He claimed to be)* He stated that he was unable to remember his birth date, birth place, date of leaving Germany, or any fact or detail whatsoever of his early life. When examined the next morning, he maintained *that* he could not remember anything that had taken place during his imprisonment in England, and ^{only} vaguely remembered the plane trip across the Channel. He could remember very little of the details of his admission to the prison, but did recall his parcels, ~~however,~~ and again asked for reassurance that they were in a safe place where they could not be tampered with.

which was to be his name for some time
Physically, Hess was in good shape, but thin. He was
dressed in his Luftwaffe uniform, though without insignia.
However his heel-clicking stiffness and somewhat incongruous
flying boots, high and black, thickly lined and made of
soft leather with a double zipper on each, ^{left} ~~gave~~ him
a military bearing that no insignia could have given.

Psychologically, these are stark and responsive.
His approach was general attitude was reserved and
formal, but he gave the impression of making an
attempt at real cooperation. His stream of thought
was controlled by his alleged memory deficit and the
narrowly of his responses compared simply of "I do
not know. I cannot remember." This was particularly
true when he was being asked to the prison and the
basic history was asked. He stated that he was unable
to remember his birth date, birth place, date of leaving
Germany, or any fact of detail whatsoever of his early
life. When examined the next morning, he maintained that
he could not remember anything that had taken place
during his imprisonment in England, and vaguely remem-
bered the plane trip across the Channel. He could
remember very little of the details of his abduction
to the prison, but did recall his parole, ~~transfer~~
and again asked for reassurance that they were in a
safe place where they could not be tampered with.

Hess' mood was somewhat depressed but showed generally normal reactions. In all other spheres except for memory he seemed quite competent and showed no abnormal projections of any type. He was studied daily, and on the 16th of October, 1945, a summary of his psychiatric status was forwarded to Justice Jackson. (Special examinations done during this period included the Rorschach Ink Blot Test, which was significant in that, while it revealed marked neurotic reactions, it did not indicate any evidence of an active psychotic process. The findings from this test indicate that Hess suffers from a true psycho-neurosis, primarily of the hysterical type, which is engrafted upon a basic paranoid personality. In other words, fundamentally, Rudolf Hess is an introverted, shy, withdrawn personality who is suspicious of his environment and projected upon his surroundings concepts developing within himself. This paranoid projection is emphasized in his suspiciousness, his desire to have everything just so, and is shown in the Rorschach Test by certain types of bizarre responses. These responses, however, are not sufficiently deviate to indicate a really active paranoid process at

I explained to him that this was — as it indeed is — a test which would give me an idea how his mind functioned without involving the memory. The test, of course, consists in showing a series of standardized ink blots and recording what the person being tested can "see" ⁱⁿ that is, project into — the blots. The analysis of results is much too complicated to be gone into here, being based on a technique requiring years to master.

Seated side by side on his cot, head in the center, I on one side of him and my interpreter on the other, we "ran" a very careful Rorschach on him, recording his every remark. From it, and from the results of other tests and observations, I

that time, but did *and in the* *(an excellent)*
~~present, but indicate the possibility of a psychotic~~
~~episode~~ *(in the past & future)*
~~At the time of the examination, however,~~
~~there was no evidence of actual insanity. His neurotic~~
~~manifestations on the other hand are quite clearly~~
~~shown in the Rorschach result, and there is no doubt but~~
~~that Rudolf Hess has a severe psycho-neurosis of the~~
~~hysterical type.~~

My ~~Psychiatric~~ report on October 16, 1945 summed
up these findings and pointed out that some of his amnesia
was probably genuine and some of it ~~was~~ *was* obvious malinger-
ing. It also seemed reasonable to assume that contact
with his confreres would cause an improvement in his
actual disability. *(This opinion was confirmed by the*
consulting psychiatrists who felt that Hess suffered
from some real amnesia together with some deliberate
faking. (All the psychiatrists agreed that his basic
personality patterns which were considered to be hysteri-
cal and paranoid) *and it was the unanimous conclusion*
of all psychiatrists concerned that Rudolf Hess was not at the time
insane and that he could face trial. It was also *well agreed*
that his present amnesia state, if maintained, would
naturally be a hindrance inasmuch as he refused to
cooperate in any way with his defense attorney. His
action on the stand on the 30th of November, 1945,
when he made his famous statement that "My memory is

again in order. The reason ^{why} I simulated loss of memory was tactical" was a typical dramatic, hysterical gesture which confirmed ^{my} the opinions ^(and those of) of the consulting psychiatrists. ^{Have} interviewed immediately after this declaration, Hess indicated that he still had some amnesia, and his superficial explanation for the maintenance that he had gained time and opportunity to prepare his defense, — simply wasn't true. — was obviously false, since ^{it} at no time did the amnesia favor his defense. In fact his attitudes and behavior ^{it handicapped his lawyer} precluded any development of a defense, and his hysterical structure is best revealed in the fact that he desired ^{to} to thrust himself into the limelight by rejecting his amnesia, fatal as such a step might become, instead of attempting to escape by continued pretense. Such reactions are very common among hysterics and are precisely what the psychiatrists expected to happen in Hess's case as the trial progressed during the court procedure.

Hess also while in prison manifested vague paranoid ^{symptoms} and at various times suspected ^{ing} that his food ^{had been} might be poisoned. These were the same sort of symptoms manifested in England and ^{I could} can only conclude that Rudolf Hess, while not actually insane, ^{was certainly} is definitely an ^{potential} unstable personality. If ^{you will} we were to consider the street as sanity and the sidewalk as insanity, we can definitely state that Hess spent the greatest part of his time on the curb.

I went down to see Hess in his cell immediately after this performance and asked him why he had thrown such a monkey wrench in the defense campaign of his attorney. He was quite unaware that he had upset his team far more than ours. All he could think of was the show he had put on. In fact, he was very like an actor after a first night. "How did I do? Good, wasn't I?" he asked, adding, "I really surprised everybody, don't you think?" I said, no, I didn't think so and Hess stopped for a moment his excited prating. "Then I didn't fool you by my play acting? I was afraid you had caught on. You spent so much time with me." I asked Hess if he remembered some movies we had shown earlier of the top Nazis at the peak of their glory. At the time he claimed he could not recognize the men, ~~and~~ even himself, in the newswreel. Now, he said: "Yes, I remember. I remembered when the pictures were shown. I thought then that you knew I was pretending amnesia. Throughout the entire newswreel you looked only at my hands. It made me very nervous to know you had learned my secret." I hadn't, in quite the way he thought. I had ~~stared~~ stared at his hands all through the showing in the hope that he would become ~~amnesiac~~ ^{memory} ~~amnesiac~~ ^{impaired}. Actually, of course, Hess still had some amnesia — even when he was claiming it all had been a hoax. I established it then and my proofs will be reported in the professional press. Not only was the amnesia real, but ~~the~~ his denial of it was a symptom of his mental ill-health. His mind never did entirely clear, though ~~improved~~ ^{improved} improve. In fact, within two weeks of the denouement in court, there was a marked improvement which Hess himself noted and commented on to me.

nervous and crack, admit my recollection of the case to protect and strengthen himself and the other Nazis present.

Hess might be called a self-perpetuated hysteric.

That is, he maintained his

Hess continued his ^(in good working) hysterical symptoms ^{and maintained order,} ~~and maintained~~ his feelings of ~~anaploxydes~~ ^{anaploxydes} for physicians by refusing ~~all types of therapy.~~ ^{have been} to take any type of medication. It would be comparatively ^{him} easy to relieve Hess of his symptoms if he ^{could have been persuaded to} would cooperate, but he prefers ^{and} to suffer, usually selecting periods for the suffering when he ^{was} is certain of observation by the ^{the largest possible audience} greatest number of people. ~~The attention he earned gratified his~~ ^{ego, but}

^{was} His colleagues are disgusted with his behaviour ~~and~~ ^{do not feel that such actions should be demonstrated by} the individual who was the former deputy of Adolf Hitler.

Goering in particular ^{was} has been upset, partly because Hess ^{had} completely fooled him with his pseudo-amnesia and partly because Goering ^{wanted} is attempting to preserve the idea that ~~(Not that, in his own mind, he had ever considered Hess strong. On the contrary, he~~ the Nazi Party was made up of strong men. ^{Told me} Goering admits ^{had} ^(convinced) ^{too weak to even to be} however, that he ^{had} always felt that Hess ^{was} was not the ideal deputy and was weak in his attitudes and drives. ~~For~~

For this reason, when Goering and Hess were named as successors to Hitler, Goering became extremely upset at the idea of Hess' nomination to succeed, should he, Goering, be killed. He angrily reproached Hitler about this decision, but Hitler quieted him down and then pointed out that Hess had been a loyal party member and should be rewarded.

Hitler felt that such public recognition was ample reward and emphasized that, after all, should Goering become leader of the Reich, he could easily discard Hess and appoint his own successor. Apparently even with his favorite friend Adolf Hitler was quite willing to play politics.

From that time on, however, it was possible to trace the development of Hess' amnesia. He first began to ~~forfe~~ ^{lose} memory

in England, during the period of intensive ^{interrogation} ~~questioning~~. Hess discovered that when, ~~he said~~ in answer to any question, he said, "I don't know," the British would keep returning to it and hammering away at that particular query. If he said, "I don't remember," the English intellig'ence men seemed inclined to drop the question. Day after day and month after month, Hess was questioned so interminably, ~~that~~ and replied, "I don't remember" so frequently that, finally, large sections of his life simply slipped below the threshold of memory. In the end, Hess was a veritable victim of an induced, even rationalized, amnesiac state.

Hess eventually confessed that much of his amnesia had been real and that his boast in court had been false. He even took some pride, in time, in ~~his~~ reporting his progress in recovering his memory. But, though his mind was improving, he once assured me, it was "still weak ^(and my brain) ~~and~~ ^{doesn't} ~~run~~ easily." That statement is interesting primarily because this conviction that "my mind is weak and ~~very~~ ^{quickly} fatigued" is a typical symptom of hysteria which, you recall, is basic in the Hess diagnosis.

A final proof if one is needed that Hess' hoax claim was phony lies in the fact that the advantage he claimed to have gained —

Hess has become more and more upset, as the trial has progressed, he demonstrated by transitory amnesic - suspicion of espionage, fear of poisoning, etc., having evidence of this ^{was} ~~remained~~ however, episodes and an increased paranoid reaction. He is, however, basically sound, ^{knowing} and ~~most~~ ^{at the time of the trial} ~~important~~ ^{right} from wrong, while he must therefore be considered as a definite deviate from normal from the psychiatric point of view, legally there ^{was} ~~is~~ no reason why he should not have continue to face trial as one of the basic founders of the Nazi Party, unless he finally develops a recurrence of his insane state similar to the episode in England. He ^{was} ~~is~~ emotionally juvenile, and his ^{as evidenced by} ~~entire~~ activity ⁱⁿ throughout the party, his love of uniforms and spectacles, and emphasized by together with his flight to England, in a dramatic fashion to accomplish an ideal, indicate ^{it} ~~his~~ adolescent lack of emotional development. ^{He was} ~~He is~~ the only prisoner who ^{failed to recognize the reality of his} ~~has~~ situation; instead he ^{firmly} ~~firmly~~ maintained his importance as the Fuehrer's deputy, maintained his firm attitude of importance as the deputy of the Fuehrer of a still important party. He has refused to admit the total defeat of ~~the~~ ^{our} Nazi ~~group~~ or to give ^(then) ~~up~~ the idea that he is not an outstanding patriot. ^{These} ~~This~~ ^{are the} distinctive aspects of Hess' personality; the paranoid and childish individual with gross hysterical manifestations who has always failed in whatever he attempted and who failed in the most spectacular effort of his life. He ^{will} ~~will~~ continue a true adolescent to the end, provided of course that the pressure of the trial does not become

(except when excessive pressure pushed him beyond the border, into)

~~too extreme, crushing what little stability he has and precipitating a psychotic episode of a recurrence of his amnesia before the end of the trial or at the pronouncement of his sentence.~~

← Alfred Rosenberg, the party philosopher, is an individual who, as a result of his close contact with Adolf Hitler, ~~has~~ ^{he} influenced the Nazi party probably more than any other single ~~individual~~ ^{person}.

~~He~~ ^{Rosenberg} was born on January 12, 1893, in Reval, Russia (Tilin, Esthonia). His father was a German official in a trading ^{company} and his mother was a Latvian. He ~~and there as well as at home acquired~~ attended German school, ~~studying~~ ^{and there as well as at home acquired} architecture and engineering at Riga. When the war broke out he went to Moscow and in 1918 received a diploma in Architecture.

In Riga, he studied
of every thing Bolshevistic and Russian, identifying these two facts he soon coalesced with them
During this period in Moscow he witnessed the Bolshevist Revolution and developed an intense suspicion and hatred of all Judaism, constructing for himself a genuine hatred to balance his strong affection for the ~~of everything Russian and Bolshevistic. In addition, the~~

~~and~~ the usual strong German nationalistic feeling common to German families abroad, ~~and~~ ^{for} ~~tended to identify every-~~ ^{unknown Fatherland.} thing Russian with Judaism. As a result of ~~this violent~~ ^{Anti-Russian attitudes} anti-Semitic, ~~and~~ ^{philosophy} anti-Bolshevistic, in later years, ~~he~~ ^{he} influenced to a large degree Hitler, and through Hitler, ~~him~~ the Third Reich.

~~He~~ ^{Rosenberg} returned to his home-town of Reval in 1918 and ~~undertook~~ ^{undertook} an assignment ~~propagandizing against~~ ^{propagandizing against} ~~began some anti-Russian agitation against the Bolshevists,~~ ^{on, which} ~~had not yet~~ ^{had not yet} ~~won over Esthonia. However, the Red~~ ^{forces.} ~~forces.~~ ^{forces.} ~~approached Esthonia, Rosenberg~~

A R, the Nazi Party philosopher was a tall, slender, placid, womanish creature whose appearance belied his fanaticism and cruelty. His conversation, however, did not. He would willingly begin the discussion of any subject under the sun but, from no matter what starting point he began, within five minutes he would be rolling off his tongue the haunted phrases in which he ^{always} discussed his own theories of blood and race. Whether on began talking about ^{the history of} history, horticulture or a paratrooper's high back, ^{Rosenberg's} ~~the~~ quick switch ^{to} the subject of blood and race was so certain one could have plotted it mathematically as a swooping curve. It was a remarkable demonstration of the single-track mind in action and it proved a sore trial to ~~intelligent~~ men who questioned him often, ^{treating} their best-aid information traps.

To ~~me~~ ^{He was the} Rosenberg was of constant interest. ~~The~~ first as it were ordained and official philosopher I had ever known in the flesh, and I must confess that my concept of a philosopher had not prepared me for the conclusions my study of R forced on me: that he was a frightfully confused man. Of course he didn't know it. He thought he was brilliant and deep & very deep. This was a natural mistake for a stupid man — for this I discovered also, that R is really of low-average intelligence. The fiction of R's brilliance is the sort of thing which ^{literary} ~~the~~ German language, particularly the written language and perhaps ~~and perhaps~~ particularly the literary efforts of scholars, ^{encourages} ~~encourages~~. So involved and obscure are German philosophical works, traditionally, that when Rosenberg wrote a book which no one could make sense of, they accepted it as gospel.

~~But~~ ^{But} ~~man~~ ^{man} ~~Schischach~~ ^{Schischach} was the most intelligent of several whom I ~~used to~~ ^{used to} ~~verify~~ ^{verify} ~~their~~ ^{their} ~~conclusion~~ ^{conclusion}. ~~Schischach~~ ^{Schischach}, ~~you~~ ^{you} ~~see~~ ^{see} ~~was~~ ^{was} ~~a~~ ^a But R is not a man lightly to be laughed off. As

fled to Germany. He ~~arrived~~ ^{resumed} in Munich where he started writing and speaking against the Bolsheviks and here he became associated with the National Socialistic Party through the influence of Deitrich Eckhardt, ^(the Nazi poet) Rosenberg and Eckhardt were thus among the earliest founders of the party, since Hitler did not attend a meeting of ~~this~~ the group until the end of 1919.

^{Thereafter} Rosenberg was at all times one of Hitler's most constant collaborators. He participated in the November 9th putsch, but apparently was overlooked in the crowd and suffered neither injury nor arrest. When the ^{Nazi} party was recognized officially, Rosenberg ^{was one of three active} ~~with Goebbels and~~ ~~Baader~~ acted as chiefs of the underground organization. Rosenberg apparently was given complete freedom and had an opportunity to visit the Landsberg Prison and thus saw Hitler nearly every day. There is no doubt that Rosenberg ^{greatly} ^{Hitler} influenced the writing of Mein Kampf to ~~a~~ ^{that} large degree, and ~~it~~ ^{his} directly reflects Rosenberg's racial and nationalistic philosophies.

TO P63
These philosophies were further embodied in Rosenberg's Myth of the Twentieth Century, which is ~~a~~ ^a basic book of the ~~National Socialistic Party~~ and ~~is~~ the authentic source on all racial questions. In this book Rosenberg delineates his racial policies, but ~~it is written in~~ ^{unbelievably} ~~such an~~ obscure and hazy fashion, that it makes extremely difficult reading. Baldur von Schirach, the youth leader/

student of both German and Am. lit, and he was skillful
in the use and understanding of both. ~~First~~ ^{He} ~~Sch~~ admitted
to me that he had never understood R's writings, especially
the Myth of the 20th Century, his magnam opus and the
blood-and-race bible of the new German faith. But Sch
admitted he had not conferred to his Nazi colleagues -
most of whom kept a copy exposed beside him - that he
could not understand it. Nor did they admit as much to
him. In fact it was an accepted Nazi fiction that everyone
had read, understood and accepted the Myth of the 20th.
Actually, "^{Sch}concluded after discussing the book with me, "I

constant collaborators, he participated in the November
1934, but apparently was overlooked in the crowd
and suffered neither injury nor arrest. When the party
was recognized officially, Rosenberg was recognized
as one of the leading chiefs of the underground organization.
Rosenberg apparently was given complete freedom and
had an opportunity to visit the Landsberg Prison and thus
saw Hitler nearly every day. There is no doubt that
Rosenberg influenced the writing of Mein Kampf.
and is directly reflected in the racial
and nationalist philosophies.
These philosophies were further embodied in Rosenberg's
Myth of the Twentieth Century. ~~with~~ ^{his} ~~own~~ ^{book} of
the National Socialism and the antisemitic source
on all racial questions. In this book Rosenberg defines
also his racial policies, but in a way in
obscure and hazy fashion, that is, in an extremely diffi-
cult manner. [Reinhold von Schirach, the youth leader]

~~of the Hitler movement~~, ^{once} ~~expressed the belief~~ ^{swore to me} that no one in ^{the Party} Germany had ~~really~~ ever read the book. He ^{himself} had made a survey of his youth leaders and found that, while everyone possessed a copy, not one of them had ever been able to wade through the labyrinth of deviation and free association that characterizes all of Rosenberg's writings. Von Schirach ^(went even further and with sarcastic humor commented) ~~further expresses the idea that~~, since every Nazi had ~~had~~ ^{of the Myth} to buy a copy, Rosenberg would undoubtedly go down in history as the ^{man} individual who had sold more copies of a book which no one had ever read, than any other ^{author} person.

As the Nazi Party developed, Rosenberg became editor of the Nazi paper, the "Völkischer Beobachter", and through ^{it} this media and his numerous ^{other} publications continued to ^{inject} ~~pour forth~~ his ideology into the party. ^{flood and race} As a result, ^(became established as) he was considered the party philosopher and in 1929 was placed in charge of a propaganda agency. ^{even made an} At this time he ~~started spreading out his activities~~, making some attempt to become ^{But} foreign minister. ^{After a series of} ^{happy experiences} ~~unfortunate incidents~~ in London, ^{one of his} ~~however~~, where he made ^{3 was placing} the mistake of ~~putting~~ a swastika wreath on the tomb of the Unknown Soldier in Westminster Abbey, he was recalled and ~~it became obvious that Ribbentrop~~ ^{eventually} ~~was definitely~~ to replace ^d him. ~~Rosenberg, therefore~~, retired into the impregnable ~~formal~~ position of philosopher to the party and was given a title which, with typical German ~~inefficiency~~ ^{stultice}

~~In so far as names go~~, ran as follows: "Deputy of the
Fuehrer of the National Socialistic Party for the Entire
Spiritual and Ideological Training and Education of the
National Socialistic Party". ~~His functions as this~~
~~title are such~~ ^{were even} vaguer ^{than its name, and under this it}
~~general~~ ^{had ample opportunity} authority Rosenberg proceeded to further his
anti-Semitic, ~~and~~ ^{implement} anti-Bolshevistic beliefs. It was
during this period that ~~the history of Germany was re-~~ ^{he supervised the recording of}
~~written under his guidance following a pattern which~~ ^{The Rosenberg histories, though often contrary to}
~~though differing entirely from the facts known to the~~
rest of the world, tended to place the Third Reich in
the best possible light, ^{at this time also,} ~~so far as its citizens were con-~~
~~cerned.~~ ^{was} Rosenberg was also appointed to numerous ~~other~~
organizations, ~~and~~ dealing with problems of culture and
belief, and his influence permeated nearly every sphere.
We find him interested in the physician's league, the
veterans' organization, the German labor front, adult
education programs, the development of German pagan
concepts, the strength-through-joy organizations, the
development of the schools and the development of
universities and teaching. In addition, he also ~~had a hand in~~ ^{undertook the}
~~his hand into~~ ^{and the} control of literature, the development of
German folk studies, ~~and~~ ^{ment of} established an academy for
ideological training.

During this period he continued as editor of several
journals, made countless speeches and published a large

number of pamphlets and books. ^{in so many fields} ~~This wealth of activity~~ ^{hash}
~~at times~~ ^{inevitably} ~~resulted in the development of considerable~~ ^{arousing}
~~antagonism since Rosenberg was definitely out-spoken~~ ^{against within the Party, for he was an out-poker, contentious,}
~~and got into conflict with nearly everyone of group in~~ ^{land every individual.}
Germany at some time or other. ^{With all universal religions —} His talks on the Church,
^{Catholic and Protestant as well as Jewish — he was in constant warfare.} as indicated earlier in his life in the Myths were

increased and it seemed to make little difference to him
whether he attacked the Catholic or Protestant group.

It was during this period also that he brought out
his well-known publication defending his Myth of the
Twentieth Century against an attack by the Catholic Church
and during this period ^{of intense activity that Rosenberg republished at frequent} also he re-emphasized his publica-
tion of the Protocols of Zion, ^{which} he had first published ^{internals}
~~these Protocols~~ ^{in 1920, and some parties have maintained}
stoutly that Rosenberg first discovered the Protocols
in Russia. ^{that he} Rosenberg denies ^a this violently stating that
while he knew about them in Russia, he had never seen a
copy until late 1919 when he ran across them in Munich.
At this time he felt that they were of great value in
revealing the "International Jewish Plot" and consequently
he had them published and republished at frequent inter-
vals from then on.

Rosenberg ^{for} carried on his multiple activities, ^{he} and
was amply rewarded by his old friend, Adolf Hitler. Hitler
singled him out for outstanding honor in giving him the
first national prize in 1937 at Nuremberg. This national

One of these is soooo Heiden whose book, Der Fuehrer, gives a very circumstantial account of Rosenberg's first acquaintance with the Protocols - one which only R could have told. ~~After Heiden I cited this book~~ ~~one day, but after R told me of first hand of the P in Munich, I left his cell & returned with Heiden's book.~~ to him, R. flew into a fury and called Heiden all sorts of a liar. He insisted that, though he had heard of them in Russia, before he emigrated and dismissed his account of ~~he~~ he had first seen the P in Munich in 1917.

Character's

NAZI FUNCTION

NAME

A

AGE

LANGUAGE

~~prize~~ was the German equivalent of the Nobel Prize which, it will be recalled, the Nazis had forbidden Germans to accept after the Nobel Prize Committee ^{in 1939} had ^{made it} awarded the Nobel Prize to Carl Van Ossietzky, a pacifist, ^{who was at the time} during the period that ~~the Nazis held it~~ ^{a prisoner} in a concentration camp. ^{Hitler's} This official backing of Hitler for Rosenberg ^{continued to the} has always been evident, in spite of the fact that most of Hitler's ^{advisors} followers have long felt that Rosenberg's activities should have been confined to purely intellectual rumina- tions, and that he should have never been given practical positions. very end,

When the war began ~~there was very little for Rosenberg to do so he~~ ^{but} was appointed in charge of the training of ^{education} German youth. True ^{to form} to his previous conduct, however, he ^{began expanding} commenced to spread out his activities and, in order to secure educational material, developed a staff which moved into France and confiscated libraries, art collec- tions, etc. for the ^{enrichment} development of ^{the} archives of the Nazi Party. All these collections, naturally, ^{made} ~~enough~~ were ^{obtained} ~~secured~~ without bothering to ^{of} secure the consent or offer- ing compensation to, the owner.

Having stripped France and the lowlands, Rosenberg in 1941 received his most important political appointment, one which he was totally unable to fulfill ~~as~~ Reichminister for the Eastern occupied territories. ^{I suspect that} ~~This appointment~~ ^{may have acted} was apparently made by Hitler partly to get Rosenberg out

from underfoot
of ~~Germany~~ and partly because, being of Esthonian birth, ~~it was assumed~~ ^{Hitler} ~~that he was~~ ^{would be} familiar with the people and problems of Western Russia. ^{As an administrator,} ~~It was a tremendous job and Rosenberg carried it forward ruthlessly.~~ ^{Rosenberg failed; as an exterminator he succeeded almost beyond belief.}

Here at last was his opportunity in a big way to emphasize his Jewish hatreds, ⁱⁿ ~~and from~~ captured documents ^{I found} ~~we find~~ ^{evidence} ~~that~~ thousands upon thousands of the inhabitants of this area were either deported or exterminated. There is little doubt but that ^{conquered Russian} ~~the East-land~~ territories suffered more under Rosenberg's jurisdiction than any other ^{area} ~~group~~ of ~~people~~ under Nazi domination. He seemed to have no concern for the future and subjected the country to looting and destruction ^{Such} ~~to an extent which has never before~~ ^{elsewhere} been seen. In other words, R simply

Rosenberg utilized his opportunity as Reich leader to put into practice all of his peculiar racial beliefs.

his "great" book,
to Lyle #62
^{Ordinarily} ~~As an individual~~ ^{'s face} Rosenberg is ~~quiet-looking, tall,~~ ^{He wore a} intelligent-appearing individual ^{but it} ~~with a~~ somewhat mild and somnolent expression ^{came awake, alive and flushed with excitement} on his face, but easily becomes excited ^{when ever} he discussed ~~the Nazi party.~~ ^{the Nazi party and} He had been married twice. His first wife developed a lung disease, and they were divorced in 1923 when she left him to go to Switzerland seeking a cure. He married again in 1925 and has one living daughter. Rosenberg is in good physical health except for some chronic rheumatism which bothered him sometimes during his stay in the Nuremberg Jail.

His personality is particularly interesting because, while his intelligence level is only average, he has been accepted throughout the years as the representative of everything thoughtful in Germany. Some of the more astute ^{Nazi} observers like Goering, von Schirach, Schacht, and others, ^{were of the opinion} ~~feel definitely~~ that Rosenberg ^{was} ~~is~~ not a very good philosopher, ^(All agreed) and that his ideas are confused and chaotic. ~~A simple study of one of his books causes the reader to be in hearty agreement with these observations, but it is quite likely that this vague and obscure form of writing lends to his works a false sense of depth which the German people misinterpret as brilliancy.~~

^(He talked endlessly, but) German literature is frequently extremely difficult to follow in translation, ^{but} and Rosenberg's achieves the ultimate ^{I took me} along these lines. It required a tremendous amount of time to piece together from his enthusiastic discussions the basic philosophy which ~~has~~ guided his life.

Dist 7 ^{all} ~~He claims to~~ ^{and} believe that all races possess specific physical and mental differences, and ^{he} classified the European races into five general types. ^{admitted} He ~~feels~~ that these five races have intermingled to a degree that makes it impossible to separate them at present and ^{that, in consequence,} ~~admits~~ that European nations are not true races but are simply nationalistic groups. ~~He emphasizes,~~ however, ^{found} that the Nordic group, ~~which~~ is primarily in Germany,

the Scandinavian ^{countries} ~~peninsula~~ and England, is the purest culture, and that the German idea was to remove the impurities in order to ^{-establish it} ~~regain the~~ status of a pure race. ^{On the other hand, Rosenberg} ~~maintained that~~ The Jewish people ^{on the other hand} are also considered by Rosenberg not to be a true race, but ^{was} ~~rather~~ a nation composed primarily of Oriental (or Arabic) types and Armenian types. However, ^{Rosenberg} because of its religion, this nation has not intermingled and consequently ^{Rosenberg essentially concluded} must be considered not only as a different nation but also as a different race. ^{Rosenbergian simplicity} That is)
He looks upon the Jewish people as definitely Oriental in their way as the Chinese or the Japanese groups. ^{Further maintained,} ~~Rosenberg next points out,~~ ^{leaving his assumption} primarily ^{on} the work of Madison Grant, whose book The Fall of a Great Race, ~~pre-~~ ^{pro-}foundly influenced Rosenberg's thinking, (that the Greek Nation deteriorated when it commenced to intermarry with other Mediterranean peoples. ~~Rosenberg attributes~~ ^{German} ~~their~~ collapse to the deterioration developing from the intermingling of races. ^{Consequently, Rosenberg preached} He further emphasizes that the problem in Germany was essentially simple. All the Germans had to do was to purify their race by prohibiting intermarriage with the Oriental Jewish group, and in a period of time their blood would become ^{That is, after mixture was interdicted, the already mixed "Nordic" blood would} again pure and non-mixed. ^{Rosenberg's ideas are consid-} ~~erably different from the known facts, for he seems to~~ ~~have~~ given no consideration to the real basis of race.

slough out its "impurities" and automatically purify itself! More Rosenbergian simplicity.

structure. His basic knowledge is limited primarily to the writings of Grant, Chamberlin, Gunther, and other German authors. He seems to have no conception of the studies done elsewhere in the world and actually appears to have given the problem only the most superficial type of thought. He does, however, definitely believe in his own ideas.

I was more than casually interested, as a psychologist, It is extremely interesting psychologically to find
here an individual who has developed a system of thought differing tremendously from known fact ~~but~~ who absolutely refuses ^d to change his theories and who ^{moreover} firmly believes in the magic of his own words. *[This was typically last characteristic]*

demonstrated one day during a study of his book The Myth of the Twentieth Century. In an endeavor to find out some of his basic beliefs, I was having read to him various chapters from The Myth, asking him to explain them. My interpreter was an American officer who had been born in Luxemburg and who had previously interrogated Rosenberg for our Intelligence Branches. Rosenberg, therefore, knew him and also knew that he was a Catholic. *[*Consequently when he started to question Rosenberg on portions of The Myth, Rosenberg reached over, took the book from his hands and closed it firmly. I asked him *(why he had done that)* what was the idea and he stated that any other interpreter would do but that he did not

solemnly told me

wish this particular interpreter to ~~read or even~~
have anything to do with his book. Both my assistant
and I were somewhat startled and pressed him for further
explanation. Rosenberg replied, "This young officer is
working for his country. He is a good soldier and also
a good Catholic, and I ~~therefore~~ do not wish to change
his way of life, ~~and~~ if he were to ever read this book,
he would renounce the Church immediately." This in-
cident occurred while Rosenberg was on trial for his
^(implementing) life for ^{in his book,} these ~~very~~ ideas and demonstrates his firm,
fixed belief in the power of his writings.

Apparently he felt that as a psychiatrist I could
not be ~~contaminated~~ ^{corrupted} further for he was quite free in
giving his basic ideas to me. ^(He was particularly emphatic) ~~and~~ in pointing out that
as an American I should be ^{make} aware of the dangers of ~~the~~
minority groups in America. ^{It was} ^{'s firm belief} Rosenberg ~~stated~~ that the
only thing wrong with the Nazi Party and its ideas was
that it had developed ~~fifty~~ years too soon, and he
propheesied that only a few decades would pass until "the
rest of the world will be able to understand us". He
^(assured me) believes that the African and Syrian-Oriental races
in themselves are respectable; but that ^(only evil and ill-fortune can come of) ~~the~~ mixing them,
~~one sine against the races mixed.~~ ^(was convinced) He feels that in America
our major problem ^{is} with the Negro race, the Oriental
~~race~~ on the West Coast and ~~what he chooses to call~~ the
"European Oriental" or ~~the~~ Jewish race. He ~~states~~, "A

" he told me.

wise politician would have left the Negroes in the country and would have allowed them to execute their own authority in manners and customs. This is in line with his constant haranging ^u ~~as~~ ^{on} the danger ^{of} ~~of~~ ^{ing} having mixed races in cities where they are apt to intermarry.

American Negro *Rose warned me in a memo,*
Rosenberg then states, and here again his fixed delusional beliefs appear, "If the problem is not remedied by step by-step resettlement in Africa," then there will be twenty million dispersed Blacks and millions of *Mulattoes in America* in fifty years. After one hundred and fifty years, there would be no more Americans, but only an unholy mess. Since the white strength could still be girded up at that time, there might be an unprecedented bloody revolution."

Ref
Rosenberg, although face to face with possible execution because of the emphasis on these identical ideas in Germany, still holds firmly to his beliefs. He further states, "The same problem applies to the Jews. A nation that wants to build up its own culture cannot have two and one half million Jews in its industrial capital. In New York they control the whole educational system, the whole gigantic film industry and big business is a pawn in the hands of the Jews and they use this power for propaganda and politics. *Vann* Political parties of today are unable to free themselves from Jewish influence. Their ideology, which confuses justice among Europeans,

(and Palestine)

[I understood this to be a circuitous reference to Zionism]

and the demands of Orientals prevents them from carrying out normal political methods. [There is therefore a fight for leadership within the same area, and if the Jewish viewpoint is triumphant, the pioneers would have fought for nothing.] "In view of the happenings in Europe, no one would dare to say anything to touch the problem in America, but American life will eventually force a decision at some time in the future. I suppose that the Anglo-Saxon, Scandinavian and German blood in the United States will be so powerful that it will not allow the beautiful land conquered by the forefathers to fall into the hands of the Oriental dealers without a fight. Even then this fight would probably be difficult because the Jews today, 150%

the philosopher

American, would probably mobilize the Blacks."

Could anyone ask better proof of R's complete inability to think clearly and express his thought simply?
~~These statements reveal the superficiality of thought which this man, the party philosopher employs.~~

Rosenberg's superficiality was given
Another example of his complete lack of ability to

~~think clearly is indicated~~ in a discussion *in which he outlined* concerning

~~his~~ *America's* solution to such a problem. He ~~believes~~ *was certain* that the only way out is by transplanting each *racial* group to an area

where it can develop by itself. ~~Along these lines,~~

Rosenberg has always held to the idea that the Jews

~~in America~~ should be transported, and offered

resettlement area for American Jews *(explained that)*
Madagascar as a likely suggestion. He ~~states~~ the Germans

were unable to transport the Jews because of the outside

pressure and it was necessary therefore simply to eliminate them. He pays America ^{the} compliment of ~~considering us less likely~~ being less apt to carry out such direct and "efficient" measures and feels that, ~~in the~~ ^{for} United States deportation of the Jews would probably be more ~~socially~~ ^{socially} feasible ~~acceptable~~ than extermination.

~~I discussed this harebrained project solemnly with him for a time until I proposed to have struck on a grave difficulty. I pointed out to him that the Jewish people on the whole tended towards an urban type of culture and in Madagascar might settle in cities leaving no one to do the rural work.~~ ^{I said, Suppose the Jewish people who live in towns, simply moved into the type of culture and in Madagascar can settle in cities. I have since checked up; Madagascar has 00000 "cities" of more than 00000 population.)}

~~Rosenberg, who has apparently been working on this deportation idea for over twenty years, was extremely surprised and said that at no time had he ever thought~~

~~of this. Then, as if to give double proof of his tendency to "solve" a problem by glossing it over, he was struck by inspiration. A beatific grin spread across his face. "But of course,"~~ ^{Then, as if to give double proof of his tendency to "solve" a problem phase of the problem. This indicates the superficiality of thought and the failure of Rosenberg}

~~he said, "How simple! You need only deport your Negroes to Madagascar, too."~~ ^{he said, "How simple! You need only deport your Negroes to Madagascar, too."}

~~would be merely to dump the Jewish people on the shores of some far coast, leaving them to shift as best they can. He did have an idea for America's salvation, however, as he said that insofar as we~~

~~were concerned, we could simply move the Jewish people to Madagascar where they would form the cities and could then follow this up by shipping the Negroes there as well, and they could do the agricultural work.~~ ^{can then congregate in cities, the Negroes can be settled on the land to feed them.}

the U.S.
million Negroes in ~~the U.S.~~, many of them Americans by more generations
than the bulk of ~~any~~ ^{the American} north European ancestry and that these old Americans might be
object to deportation to ~~Mad~~,
to work

I pointed out that, after all there were some thirteen to fifteen
When presented with the thought that the Negroes might
not thus be disposed of, he shrugged his shoulders and
said that the original inhabitants of the island could
be forced ^{to work} on the farms. This complete lack of consid-
eration for human values and human rights is ^{characteristic} prevalent
in every thought of Rosenberg. We see in him the cul-
mination of everything brutal and vicious in the Nazi
party. Unfortunately, we have had an example of what
happens when an individual like Rosenberg, unable to
think out a problem clearly, is given total power.
One has only to read the reports on the total despoila-
tion of the Eastlands to realize the utterly ^{devastating} horrid
result: when such a loose thinker is given power to
carry out his thought.

Rosenberg, although his name is commonly consid-
ered Jewish, denied ^{element in his ancestry} violently any Jewish origin. He
^{insisted} states that he is part Icelandic ^(rather than Icelandic) and part German, but
I was ^{ed} that ^{that} it is interesting to note that, for the most part, ^{Establish that}
he considers ^{ed} the name, Rosenberg, Jewish ^{in fact, captured documents} and when he
was ^{from Eastland} in charge of the Eastlands and was selecting Jews
for deportation, he included en masse, without inves-
tigation, every individual by ^(bearing his own) the name of Rosenberg.

Rosenberg ^{ed, however,}
He maintains that he ^{was} is not guilty, even in the face
of overwhelming evidence, of the crimes of which he ^{was} is
^{convicted} accused. He states that, "what has motivated me in
to

Half pleading, half boasting, he told me:

twenty-five years of battle was the idea of wanting to serve not only the German people, but the whole of Europe, in fact the whole white race".

There is little doubt that history will ~~look upon~~ ^{take a dim view} of Rosenberg's ^(high-minded) services ~~from an exceedingly dim viewpoint~~.

^(Nazis tried) Of all the ~~was~~ ^{was} criminals, the one who has been most ~~greatly~~ ^{as almost any} discussed in Hermann Goering. He has been analyzed considered everything from a Machiavellian villain to a fat, harmless eunuch, with the ~~average~~ ^{as} general ~~tendency~~ ^{being to} identify opinion putting him in the position of a mere satellite of Hitler, who spent his time seeking medals, glory and riches.

Goering's personality is ~~the~~ ^{in this discussion} most important ~~from~~ our point of view since he is the only one ~~left~~ ^(almost) of the ~~major criminals~~ ^{co-equal} ~~who included Hitler, Himmler, Goebbels,~~ ^(his major colleagues, and Hitler being head.) and Goering. Although other party members played various important roles, these four individuals ~~can be~~ ^{his position} ~~were~~ ^{and Hitler being head.} ~~found~~ ^{were} involved in practically every phase of German government and policy. There is little doubt but that these ~~men~~ ^{were} represent the nucleus of the Nazi Party. In such ~~a~~ ^{and Goering was} ~~and in such company one would expect Goering to be little~~ ^{nobody's fool, not even Hitler. He was} ~~more than a fat old fool.~~ ^{a brilliant, brave, ruthless, grasping, brilliant executive. This opinion} ~~This opinion is not shared~~ ^{of him is the fruit of many hours spent with him in his cell.} ~~by most observers who have studied him, however, and~~ ^{interrogators have pointed out that he is highly} ~~interrogators have pointed out that he is highly~~ ^{deserving welcome.}

^(tightly knit and effective company)

^{there would have been no place for a fat and fatuous fool.}

As a prisoner and as a patient Gearing was one of the easiest to get along with and to interview. Each day when I came to his cell on my rounds, he would jump up from his chair, greet me with a broad smile and outstretched hand, escort me to his cot and pat ^{its middle with} his great paw. "Good morning Herr Doctor." "I am so glad you have come to see me. Please sit down, Doctor. Sit here." Then he would ease his own great body - ^(over 300 pounds) he still weighed ~~over~~ when the trial began - down beside me, ready to answer my questions.

of Hitler, who spent his time seeking medals, glory and
 Olympic laurels. He is the possessor of a more realistic
 and harmless enough, with the ~~main~~ ^{main} ambition

[illegible]

(to his list of negative characteristics)

I must add, therefore, that Hermann Goering, ~~prisoner~~, was a man of

intelligent and cunning. In addition, almost all of those who have worked with him since his capture have emphasized his ~~charming manner~~ ^{eloquent} (when he chose to be charming), and his abilities in persuasive speech. It is only by combining the opinion one forms of Goering the man with his known activities as a ruthless politician that an accurate picture can be delineated.

Goering was born on the 12th of January, 1893 in Bavaria. He came from a good family, his father having been the first governor of the German colony in Southwest Africa and later its minister president. He had also ^{German Consul} ~~His father later~~ served as a counsel general in Haiti.

Goering was born in Germany ^{but only because} through the fact that his mother ^{had} [especially] travelled from Haiti so that her son might be born on precious German soil. She soon returned to Haiti, however, and Goering ^{the infant} ~~to~~ ^{was left with} early care ~~was taken over by~~ friends in Bavaria. ^{In 1896} Eventually, his parents ~~the family~~ returned to Germany in 1896 and settled at the family estate of Veldenstein in Bavaria.

Early in life, therefore, we find Goering ^{was deprived of} ~~essentially~~ without a strong family attachment, ^{left to} growing up in an environment in which he was forced to make his own way. This aggressive ^{ness which these circumstances inculcated} development was evidenced early in ^{his} life at school when it was necessary to transfer him from one school to another because of his frequent

a fighter from babyhood,

~~shuffles~~ arguments and fights with other children. He seems to have headed ^{naturally} directly towards a military ^{career} education, taking out his aggression during his vacations in climbing mountains and hunting. He attended military academy, and was finally commissioned a lieutenant. ~~He started~~ ^{and began} in ^{his} the first World War ^{service} as an officer in the infantry. ^{Before the end} but ^{of} in 1914, ^{however, he} entered the Air Force, ^{he was} and by 1916, rated as one of Germany's major aces. Although shot down and severely wounded in 1916, he rejoined his squadron early in 1917 and eventually was appointed commander of the Richofthen Air Circus, the most famous of the German air units.

At the conclusion of the war he refused to surrender to the American forces and flew his entire unit into Germany where they never officially surrendered. ^{For his Air Force exploits} During this period he was also awarded the Pour Le Merite, Germany's highest military award.

^{With the end of the war} Following the peace, Goering found himself without special ^{peacetime} skill or training, ^{other than for the} ~~other than for the~~ military, without a ^{less, he felt} job, ^{feeling} a deep sense of frustration in Germany's defeat. In addition, he was possessed of tremendous energy and deep aggressive drives for which he had no ^{ready} ~~obvious~~ outlet. We find him protesting ineffectually against various Allied activities in Germany and travelling about seeking a job. Finally he went to Sweden and worked in an air-^{a married woman,} plane company. Here Goering courted ^{the} Baroness

eagerness for
insisted it was neither ~~but~~ his own *self-approvement*.
"I hated the Republic," he said, "I knew it could not last. I saw that as soon
as the Allies withdrew their support, a new govt would take over in Germany.
I wanted to keep destroy the Republic and to be, perhaps, the top man, *der Fuehrer*, in the

Karin von Faulk, and, after she had *obtained* a divorce,
married her and returned to Germany to live near Munich. *There,*
He apparently felt *conscious of a* lack of educational ~~achievements~~,
for he attended the University of Munich for the next
year, taking courses in history and political science.

When I asked him whether it was Hitler's oratory or his arguments that won him over,
During this period *Goering* he met Hitler and became an enthusi-
astic follower. He states now that he spent consider-
able time looking over the various parties and felt
that the one represented by Adolf Hitler promised the
most for Germany. He also adds that in this party he
was one of the most prominent members, and it seemed
to him that this party could be developed into the
ruling group of the German people. He quite frankly
adds that he was interested in selecting a party which
would be successful, because he hoped to eventually
assume leadership.

As far as the basic principles of the Party were
concerned, Goering was interested only in the fact that
that their platform stood for a greater Germany. Other
principles such as the anti-semitism, etc. were of
little interest to him. Goering, as the outstanding
officer in the group, formed the S.A. for Hitler and
was one of the major leaders in the Munich Putsch on
November 9, 1923. He was wounded at this time in the
right thigh, *and later developed a severe infection which*
~~which became severely infected and caused~~
him to be hospitalized until 1924. During this period

new Reich."

This was a cold-blooded political pragmatism which I had never heard attributed to H. G. J., therefore, questioned him closely on the point. This is the story as he told it to me as I sat knee to knee with him on his prison cot:

"You see, mein Komrad, it was this way. There were at that time about 50 organizations — parties, call them — of ^{World War} ~~German~~ veterans in Germany. They didn't like the govt. They didn't like the Versailles Treaty. They didn't like peace — not ^a peace ^{in which} ~~where~~ there were no jobs, no food, no shoes.

"I knew that the overthrow of the govt would be done by these dissatisfied men. So I looked over their parties to see which ones showed promise. After studying each one I decided to join the National Socialist Party. It was small — that meant I could soon be a big man in it. It appealed to the unhappy veterans — that meant it would have the man power for a putsch. It attacked Versailles — that gave it character and a target for the emotions of the veterans.

"You see, I was right. The fight on Versailles made our party popular with all Germans; the old soldiers swore by us — and I, I became the head of the nation. But too late."

I looked at the Heaven.

he was given considerable amounts of ^{narcotics} sedative and developed a morphine addiction. Following his release from the hospital in 1924 he travelled about Italy and eventually went to Sweden where he entered an asylum and was cured of his habit. There is no evidence that he had any insane behaviour at this time; and although many of his biographers point out that he was held in the locked wards, this type of incarceration is commonly ~~carried out in the~~ treatment for morphine addiction. Goering's drug habits have been the subject of considerable discussion and it would seem best to dispose of them here.

In 1929 he developed severe attacks of sore throat and again took small doses of drugs without developing addiction. In 1937 he began to take paracodeine which is a very mild morphine derivative. ~~He continued to take it throughout the war.~~ Goering continued on this paracodeine, which he had originally taken because of trouble with his teeth from 1937 until the summer of 1945. Confused reports have appeared concerning the dosage of the drug taken, probably because Goering had special tablets prepared for his exclusive use. These tiny tablets contained only a small amount of paracodeine and a hundred of them, Goering's average daily dose, are the equivalent of only about three to four grains of morphine. This

was a paracodeine addict, but he also.
Addiction and habit differ. Goering had the paracodeine-
pill habit, just as others have the cigaret habit. It was something
to do with his hands and mouth which he was accustomed to, and
liked, doing.

is not an unusually large dose - not to be considered
at any time to have affected his mental processes.

Goering took the drug partly because of the addiction, of course.
— and few persons have ever understood this —
and partly because he had developed a habit, ~~some~~

But he took it

in the same way that some people smoke cigarettes or
eat peanuts during the day. He would ^{place} ~~get~~ a bottle

which contained a hundred ^{of} ~~or so of the~~ tablets, ~~place~~

it on his desk in the morning and then, during confer-

ences or discussions, he would reach over and shake

out a few tablets into his hand and chew them lei-

surely while carrying on his conversation. Taken in

such a manner, they gave him no particular stimula-

tion, but he continued to take them because, whenever

he cut down on the dosage he developed pains in his

legs. ^{I can swear that} ~~That~~ his addiction was not very severe, ^{If it had been I could} ~~was~~

never have

~~taken him off the drug in the manner I did~~
~~borne out by the treatment which was administered~~

following his capture. ^{I used} ~~He was taken off the drug~~

by a simple, straight withdrawal method of cutting down

the dosage each day until no more drug was received.

During this period he had no special complaint except

occasional pains, which were easily relieved by mild

sedation. ^{lives} ~~The only other "medication" I used was psychiatric~~

~~employed as a method of controlling his complaints~~

~~for~~ Goering is very proud of his physical prowess and

his ability to withstand any type of pain. Consequently

it was simple to suggest to him that perhaps while weaker men such as Ribbentrop (^{loathed} whom he ~~hated~~) would require doses of medicine should they ever be withdrawn from a drug habit, he, Goering, being strong and forceful would require nothing. Goering felt this was a reasonable idea and agreed whole-heartedly. ^{Thereafter} Following this discussion, throughout the entire course of treatment, he made light of his pains and, although he suffered some withdrawal symptoms, never mentioned ^{them} it unless pressed to do so.

Frank
Smulish
experience

This ^{conviction of} characteristic of belief in his own ~~physical~~ ^{(was paralleled by} strength ~~is emphasized by his physicians and also by~~ the meticulous attention he ^{id} pays to his body. He ^{could} ~~can~~ describe in minute detail every scar and blemish on his skin and in discussing the injuries which he received when shot down during air combat in 1916, he ^a ~~gave~~ precisely the length and width of the resultant scar in centimetres, ~~and~~ ^d enumerated quite specifically the number of splinters which penetrated his hip and ^d ~~described~~ ^{apparently with equal} accurately every miligram of upholstery ^{cy} which was forced into the wound.

He carried ^d with him a beautifully made leather case containing all the accessories for the most fastidious male toilette. ^{But, contrary to} In ~~spite of~~ rumors, he ^{did} ~~does~~ not use face powder, eyebrow paint, or lipstick but ^{was} ~~is~~ nevertheless extremely concerned with the care

of his skin, and employed ^d large amounts of face lotions, body powder and the like. His clothes ~~are~~ ^{were} beautifully made; his underwear and stockings ~~are~~ ^{were} of the finest silk and his entire habits of dress ~~are~~ ^{were} concentrated on embellishing what he considered ^{ed} to be the finest physique in Germany.

This narcissistic attitude proved of some use to ~~me~~ ^{me} in persuading him to ~~voluntarily~~ ^{his} reduce ~~in~~ ^{his} weight. When captured, he weighed about 280 pounds, and even he was willing to admit that he was somewhat bulgy. ^{When I} Consequently ~~it was~~ pointed out that he would make a better appearance in Court should he lose some weight, ^{he agreed and} ~~etc diplomatically~~. ^{I wanted to reduce his weight for purely medical reasons.} ~~It was felt that this would be medically of value~~ ^{I knew that he suffered} since ~~he was known to suffer~~ from a chronic minor heart ailment, and ^{wanted to reduce the load on his heart, it being} ~~it was felt that his health would~~ ^{largely my responsibility to see that he was in good health at the time of the trial.} ~~be improved if he lost some of this excess fat. He~~ ~~voluntarily submitted to the simplest type of technique -~~ ~~that is, direct reduction of his food.~~ [The straight army field ration, which he was receiving, probably helped in this decision but, nevertheless, he was quite cooperative and lost approximately sixty pounds ^{in five months}.] The only condition which he insisted upon was that we permit some of the German prisoners of war to refit his uniform so he would make a neat appearance ^{in court}.

[This concession was granted, not so much because we

were interested in his appearance but because ~~it was~~
~~an absolute necessity since~~, without refitting, his
clothing would have flapped to such an extent that
he would have been unable ^{to keep} ~~to hold up~~ his trousers.

~~Goering has always been extremely proud of his
physical abilities and his hobbies, such as mountain
climbing and hunting emphasize this facade of his
character.~~

^{Goering's}
Another side of his personality which is little
known is his extreme ^{fondness for} ~~tenderness~~ to his family and
friends. His abilities as a host have been widely
publicized, and there is little doubt that he genuine-
ly enjoys ^{it} giving rollicking parties for the entertain-
ment of those people to whom he is attached. He ~~is~~ ^{was} was
easily ~~emotionally~~ swayed and ~~is~~ ^{was} the type of personal-
ity who put all his great drive and enthusiasm into
the activity of the moment. ^{For him, it was} ~~It is~~ the present that
counts ^{it}, combined with rosy dreams of the future. An
understanding of this side of his personality helps ^{ed me}
~~us~~ to account for the fact that, while his first wife
lay dying in Sweden ^(in 1934) he remained in Germany, working
with Hitler in the development of the party. During ^{a critical}
~~this period, which was a critical one, one could under-~~
~~stand his intense enthusiasm for what he was actually~~
~~doing in bringing Hitler to power.~~ Many biographers

have considered Goering as unemotional because he did not return to his wife's deathbed, but such behaviour is exactly what one ^{sh} ~~would~~ have expected of this ambitious personality, engaged at a crucial moment in those activities which were to yield him the greatest possible future rewards. More important than the future in this instance was the fact that he had been in Germany for some time before her final illness and was under the sway of present enthusiasms. This ^{ability to} ~~living~~ ^{only} in the present ~~and thinking only~~ ^(almost cut off from) vaguely of past ties ~~was~~ ^{is} typical of Goering.

^{Three years after his first wife died,}
~~Goering's wife died in 1931, and later, in 1934,~~
when the party had finally achieved power, her body was brought to Germany with tremendous pomp and ceremony and buried at Karinhall.

The next year Goering married Emmy Sonnemann. There is little doubt but that Goering was deeply attached to his second wife and that his marriage was not, as has been suggested, a political one. They have ^{d/} one child, Etta, born in 1938. ^{I am completely convinced} ~~There is no doubt whatsoever~~ that she is definitely Goering's own daughter. I mention this because of the considerable doubt raised by Strelcher, who in a newspaper tirade against Goering hinted that perhaps she had resulted from artificial insemination. This little incident eventually

(, though it was not the only cause
led to Streicher's removal from the party, although
the Nazi group itself charged him with numerous other
acts. Oddly enough, however, Goering was one of the
signers in his trial
major leaders against him, and it is reasonable to
expect that after these statements, Goering bore him
no good will.

(during the trial)
Also false and the recent newspaper reports that
Goering's wife has thrown over her husband and is seek-
ing a divorce. *Aside from his own future,*
(as a matter of fact, Goering's primary
concern to be concern ~~is~~ for his family, *He once told me that,* and in a direct statement he
said that on his surrender, the only condition he asked
was that his family be adequately ^c cared for. His letters
to his wife and child indicate not only his strong love,
but his effervescent emotional ^s reactions which appear
in the fluency of his speech not only when dealing
with his family, but in most emotional association.

He writes for example: "To see your beloved hand-
writing, to know that your dear hands have rested on
this very paper; all that and the contents itself has
moved me most deeply and yet made me most happy. Some-
times I think my heart will break with love and longing
for you. That would be a beautiful death." —or—

And again:
"My dear wife, I am so sincerely thankful to you for all
the happiness that you always gave me; For your love
and for everything, never let Etta get away from you."

I can tell you endlessly what you and Etta mean to me and how my thoughts keep centering on you. I hold you in passionate embrace and kiss your dear sweet face in passionate love. Forever, Your Hermann."

It is my opinion that
On the other hand, Mrs. Goering reciprocated to the fullest ~~extent~~ her husband's feeling and ~~is un-~~ *remained throughout* doubtedly completely loyal to him ~~even in his present situation.~~

Goering carried his feeling for his family and his friends into other spheres, ~~and~~ ^{himself} although he ^{he} was a great hunter, ^{for that purpose} felt that animals should be protected and drew up the ~~current~~ Reich hunting and forestry laws. These were people and things that he liked; his family, his friends, and ~~God's~~ animal ~~creatures~~, and for them nothing was too good. On the other hand, he had a complete and total disinterest in any living thing which did not fall into these groups. This is clearly ^{anti-} demonstrated in his ^{vivisection} law. ~~When~~ ^{explaining this law} In a radio speech he stated, "I have forbidden vivisection in Prussia with immediate effect and have put it under punishment for the time being until the law itself puts it under severe penalties, under the punishment of being thrown into a concentration camp."

Here we find the typical Goering protecting ~~the~~ ~~rights of~~ animals, even preventing their use in medical research, with ~~(a penalty of incarceration and death in the concentration camp)~~ for the human who so much as

molests a stray cat in an attempt to develop techniques for the ^{preservation} ~~health~~ of the human race. ~~Here we have~~ Goering, the ruthless, ^{the} cold, ^{the} hard, ~~proud individual~~, showing less concern for the life of a human being than for the life of an experimental animal. This is the Goering who led the blood purge in 1934, who stated in his public speeches:

"I would rather shoot sometimes too short or too far, provided only that I shoot. My measures will not be sicklied over in legalistic doubts, nor will they be sicklied over by bureaucratic pressure; here is not justice which I have to exercise; here I have only to annihilate and to destroy, nothing else."

Again, after the Nuremberg Anti-Semite laws were promulgated, he
~~Goering carried this ruthless policy through all~~
~~demanded enforcement in these words:~~
~~of his acts in the Third Reich and in 1935 we find his~~

statement, "God has created the races. He did not want equality. This equality does not exist. We have never accepted such an idea and therefore we must reject it in our laws likewise."

~~As a direct result~~
~~of Goering's emphasis, the enforcement of the Nuremberg~~
~~laws went into action.~~

This is the Goering
This is the Goering who ordered the bombing of Rotterdam, who said to me: "Of course, we re-armed. We re-armed Germany until we bristled.

I am only sorry we did not re-arm more. Of course, I considered treaties *P* as so much toilet paper. Of course, I wanted to make Germany great. If it could be done peacefully, well and good. If not, that's

just as good. My plans against Britain were bigger than they ascribe even now. When they told me I was playing with war by building up the Luftwaff I replied I certainly was not running a finishing school. "I joined the party because it was revolutionary, not because of the ideological stuff. Other parties have made revolutions so I figured I could get in on one too, and the thing that attracted me to the Nazi Party was that it was the only one that had the guts to say 'to hell with Versailles', while the others were smiling and appeasing. That's what got me. Naturally Hitler was glad to have me because I had a great reputation amongst officers of the first World War. I was of value to them and in turn I was to become the leader of the Reich."

Charming as Hermann Goering may have been, he was — when as a prisoner — in our hands it suited him to be so — his own fascinating conversation made it too well known to history to need further discussion.
unmistakably clear that he
Goering has no sense whatsoever of the value of human life, of moral obligation, or any of the other finer attributes of civilization when they conflicted with his own ego-centric aims. *led man* He represents an individual who one moment could be the life of the party and a friend to all and *the next* in another moment could without compunction, as a matter of fact without even considering, order a thousand people to their death. No

all his companions

But,

Boehm

1
matter how much we disapprove of this ^{at} ~~face~~ of Goering's character, we must recognize his tremendous drive and capacity for work, coupled with a keen intelligence which made him Hitler's most valuable executive officer.

Goering ~~had~~ ^{and def} an excellent intelligence, bordering on the highest level ~~and~~ ⁱⁿ addition, ~~had~~ ^{he had} a keen imagination and a good educational background. These assets complemented by ^{as a public or} the ability to speak, a charming personality (when he ^{chose} ~~chose~~ to be charming) and a sense of humor made him Hitler's most outstanding follower. Obviously, his complete disregard of human life ^{his} and ability to carry out policy no matter how brutal ^{also} elevated him in Hitler's eyes. Eventually, Goering gained control over more activities than any individual in the Third Reich except Hitler. A list of his ^{offices} ~~activities in the Reich~~ as of the 1st of April, 1945 include: ^{Hitler's Deputy} Prussian Prime Minister; President of the Prussian State Council; ^{to} ~~Deputy of Hitler~~ and Reich Governor of Prussia; President of the Reichstag; Reich Minister of Aviation; Commander-in-Chief of the Air Force; Reich Forestry and Hunting Master; Chairman, ~~and~~ Ministerial Council for the Defense of the Reich; Member of the Secret Cabinet Council; Reich Marshall. ^{rest, assumed that} And ~~don't~~ ^{for a minute} ~~for a minute~~ ^{that} ~~for Hermann~~ Goering ~~performed~~ ^{performed} the duties of every one of them effectively. Goering completely controlled the field of aviation, ~~taking over~~ both civilian and military activity,

and, as ~~the~~ president of the major aviation companies, *he also* controlled the administration of air traffic and the development of all aviation in the Reich.

As an individual,
Goering was one of the most powerful figures in *the* German economic ~~field~~ *and, moreover,* and, oddly enough, during a short period as ~~the~~ Minister of Economics, he almost completely reorganized this department. He ~~had also~~ *developed an industrial combine, which eventually grew to be the third largest industrial trust in Europe, controlling huge properties, not only in the Reich itself, but throughout other territories.*

In addition to ~~these~~ *his* numerous commercial and political activities, Goering found ample time not only to entertain frequently in a grand style at his residences in Germany, but also to ~~make~~ *undertake* numerous visits abroad ~~which were in the nature of~~ political missions.

With so much power, Goering was a target of considerable envy ~~for~~ most of the other major Nazis. He had frequent disagreements on policy with Ribbentrop, Himmler and others, and developed a special corps of paratroopers who were constantly in attendance as body guards. His strong hold on Hitler continued but gradually weakened during the war, primarily as a result of the failure of the Luftwaff to prevent the bombing of Germany.

~~In addition,~~ his rivalries with other members of the Reich hastened his decline and during the latter ~~st~~

few months of the war ~~he~~ he was essentially in retirement.

His final days as a member of the Third Reich are of interest in revealing how completely his opponents had influenced Hitler. On the 22nd of April, Hitler in a discussion with Jodl had announced his intended suicide and told Jodl that Goering would assume command. Hitler notified Eva of his decision and Jodl sent word to Goering that Hitler planned to remain in Berlin to the last but that the end was near and Goering would take command ~~of the rest of the troops.~~ ^{on Hitler's death.} Goering

received this communication late that evening and the next morning wired Hitler requesting further information and the specific date for the assumption of

command. ^{But,} During the evening, Hitler had changed his mind and, apparently not realizing Jodl ^{had communicated with Goering,} ~~communication~~ ~~had been sent,~~ ^{was inclined to view Goering's move as an attempt to usurp power.} ~~became violently incensed with what he assumed to be Goering's usurpation of power.~~ Ribbentrop, ^{I questioned} about this affair, as he had been with Hitler at the time. Ribbentrop verified all Goering told me, ~~who was present, verified these incidents but emphasized~~

^{but swore} that it was the consensus of all ^(the leaders then) ~~those~~ in Berlin ^(and himself) ~~which~~ ^{Jodl having returned to the field -} included Bormann, and Goebels, that Goering was simply

trying to take over the government. Apparently these ^{three,} ~~individuals~~ who had ~~always~~ been Goering's bitterest

rivals, convinced Hitler. ^{This took some doing, however,} for at six in the evening ^{(of the 23rd,} Hitler wired Goering that the date had not yet come but that Goering would be duly notified. Goering, quite elated, planned a celebration

which would mark the achievement of his greatest dream -
~~an empty~~ ^{as it was by then.} result, however, in view of the fact that Germany
was rapidly crumbling under Allied blows. [His ~~idea~~ ^{plans}
were ~~considerably~~ ^{however,} dampened at 8 o'clock when a group
of SS troops arrived and put him under house arrest,
stating that he had reacted in a treasonable fashion
to Hitler and ~~the~~ ^{the} party, but that Hitler had ordered
his life spared because of his previous great work in
the Third Reich. [Goering spent the next four days
under house arrest, ~~trying to contact various individ-~~
~~uals without effect~~ and on the 27th of May he received
an unsigned telegram stating that he had been official-
ly ousted from the party. ~~Officially~~ On the night of
April 29, ^(another) a telegram arrived, signed Bormann, with
direct orders for the SS to liquidate Goering and his
staff. ~~Goering had been in communication with~~
~~Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS, at this point, and~~
~~while Kaltenbrunner would not release him, he was~~
~~equally~~ reluctant to have Goering shot without having
Hitler's signature ^{on the order.} actually in his possession. [There
is little doubt in the minds of everyone concerned
with this incident, that Hitler probably never saw
^(the Bormann) ~~this~~ telegram and that it was ~~simply~~ conceived and
sent by Bormann and Goebbels. At any rate, the SS-
troops did not carry out this order and by the 2nd
of May, Goering had completed his plans for libera-
tion. At 3 o'clock that afternoon a number of Luftwaff

paratroopers passed through the castle area and "by coincidence" the lead truck of the convoy broke down. The paratroopers all got out to stretch their legs and ~~after a bit of maneuvering~~ suddenly surrounded Goering's guards and Goering was again a free man. (This maneuver, while spectacular, was hardly worthwhile, for at 6 o'clock that evening an order from Kesselring, the commander of the area, arrived, officially ordering his release. Goering remained in his castle following this incident until his decision to surrender to the American Army.

~~Since Goering's surrender to the American Army,~~
~~he has demonstrated nearly all the facets of his many-sided personality.~~ His surrender ~~itself~~ was typical, in his *He* arrival ^{ed} laden with jewelry, joy, and *a trunkful of paracodine pills* ~~open-mindedness~~ to greet the American Army. He accepted the Army's *the entire German stock of the Army* attitude that he was a prisoner of war and gladly surrendered his valuable baton, the symbol of his Reich Marshallship. ~~He was not happy over the ruling that his personal belongings should also be taken into custody, but finally consented with the proviso that they accompany him to his present site.~~

On his arrival at "Ashcan", the code name for the American prison camp at Mondorf, ^(upset by being) he was informed that the services of his adjutant no longer were needed, ~~a fact which displeased him considerably,~~ *He was further* ^{annoyed to learn} that his personal possessions would be ^{stored} maintained in

the prison safes, rather than in his room. He accepted ^{first blustered and complained} but, when his protests brought no results, he ^{as} this decision with some complaint, but finally resigned himself and since ^{thenceforth} ~~this period~~ ^{much the same} has received no different treatment than any other German prisoner.

I was particularly interested in ^{as they do} Goering's personal possessions, are of some interest in demonstrating his love of finery and ^{the} narcissistic structure ^{of his personality}. He possessed three large rings, a ruby, an emerald and a blue diamond, each set in a massive platinum mount, and he ^{told me} ^{has} stated that he always carried his rings so as to be able to select a color each day which best suited his mood.

In addition, he ^{carried} ^{must} had a massive emerald which he ^{It was by all odds the largest I had seen,} claimed to be the largest he had ever ^{truly} ^{measuring about one inch by one half} seen, probably a true statement since it was a tremendous stone. ^{an experienced emerald collector,} He ^{cigar} carried a gold and cigarette cases, gold pens and pencils, and ^{found} ^{inch} apparently liked to know precisely what time it was since he maintained four jeweled watches and travelling clocks in his equipment. Everything ^{he had} ^{most of it had come from the} was naturally of the finest quality and ^{kindness for} to a large degree had been obtained in occupied countries. Goering ^{likes only} the finest in everything. This liking applied not only to his personal possessions but to his dwellings, and his collections. He maintained a number of castles ^{some of Europe's finest} which he had furnished with art productions. ^{he knew the merit of his paintings} ~~He~~ ^{for} And he apparently was well informed along these lines and his collectors have ^{sworn} ~~made statements~~ that his knowledge of art was not at all superficial but rather that of

Amoral egotism? Certainly. And such egotism without ethics is dangerous to society, particularly when found in a strong character. Hermann Goering was strong, a natural leader.

a seasoned and intelligent expert.

When I asked him why he looted on so magnificent a scale,

Most of Goering's looted ~~art~~ ^{the art} collections have had

been recovered. ^{He swore to me:} He states that he had no intention

of keeping them for himself, but planned, on his death, ^{Alas, I thought of the German people. I made plans that}

to create a huge museum ^{would be created} for the German people. ^{my} He paused and

adds, in his simple fashion, "Naturally it would be ^{this great gift}

known as the Hermann Goering collection".

cast me a proud side glance.

Goering demonstrated his peculiar abilities of leadership immediately in the prison ^{when the trial began} by assuming his place at the head of the dining table without question. His right to command was apparently taken for granted by all of the prisoners ^{where/you} and since this time, Goering ~~has~~ fancied himself as leader in the defense of his compatriots. He ^{said to me:} states, "We are sort of like a team, all of us who have been accused, and it is up to us to stick together to accomplish the strongest defense. Naturally, of course, I am the leader, so it is my problem to see that each of us contributes his share."

As the trial continued, this bid for leadership was somewhat defeated by the growing knowledge ~~from~~ ^{the evidence} of Goering's part in the atrocities. Several of the more ^{shrewd} ~~thinking~~ of the accused, led ^{mainly} ~~primarily~~ by Schacht, who was one of Goering's ~~most~~ ^{best} bitter enemies, ^{trial} ~~had~~ begun to pull away from their erstwhile deputy ~~fuehrer~~. Nevertheless, his power ~~was~~ ^{was} not been broken and whenever anything of importance ^{came} ~~came~~ up, the accused men in the dock ^{could} ~~can~~ be

seen looking to Goering for advice and leadership. He ~~has~~ been in a position of command for so long that he naturally assumes it as his right, and for the most part the others are merely content to follow.

As distinctive as Goering's natural assumption of leadership was his ability to disregard those aspects of his circumstances which denied or belittled his authority.
During his period in prison, Goering also manifested his ability to adapt to an unpleasant situation. (The

sudden *environment*
A change of circumstances over a short period from a situation wherein his slightest wish was immediately granted, to incarceration in a tiny cell containing only a bed, a table, a chair, and a toilet, must have been profoundly shocking, and yet Goering ~~has~~ probably complained less and accepted prison routine with more

grace
accommodation than almost any other of the group. ~~That~~ *What* he was a man of big ideas, massive plans. Even in prison he remained future plans he ~~had~~ had, have been primarily concerned

with fundamental issues and the petty problems of daily prison life ~~he~~ *he* simply shrugged away. ~~He has~~ *What* directed his complaints *he made were concerned with* *regularly,* primarily towards securing communication with his wife, ~~and once this was established,~~ *He was able to send & receive letters.* he settled back and became a nearly model prisoner. This ability to adapt to a sudden change in circumstance represents one of Goering's primary assets, ~~and~~ *and* his simple interest in the end-point, rather than in the situation as it develops, has been characteristic of him throughout his life.

At Nuremberg,
In the present instance, Goering ~~has~~ *simply* assumed that he ~~will~~ *would* be found guilty and condemned to death.

— maintaining throughout that he was being persecuted

He accepts^{ed} this fate as a German patriot rather than as a war criminal and ^{throughout the trial} is concerned exclusively with himself keeping his name as free as possible from the taint of atrocities and war crimes. [So far as the organization of the party and the plans for war are concerned, Goering is quite willing to admit his part, from the first willingly admitted his part to me. In the trial, and to me on occasion, he stressed what he did, stressing however that he did so only to build a

[In intimate, knee-to-knee talks on the bunk in his cell, however, he admitted that a more basic motive than love of Germany was a driving, however, and admits that his single ambition was to (for Hermann Goering) achieve supreme command of the Third Reich. Hitler had promised over and over that Goering would be his

successor, and Goering felt that this end-point was reached. He reached his goal too late. At Nuremberg he was a fugitive without a country, worth anything he might have done in Germany. Now a marshal without an army, a prisoner accused of aggressive war against the world and deliberate (murder of millions). In such straits, he did not lose hope or even ambition — for posthumous glory and power. His sole aim ing hope in life is to establish himself in the minds

of the German people (so that he will go down in German) history will record him as one of its outstanding heroes. Consequently, his attitude in prison, his behaviour at the trial and his remarks have all been directed towards this single purpose. Petty problems dealing with prison routine, the constant vigil of the guards and lack of exercise are of no interest to him; he concentrates on his one last purpose. Here again we find manifested this tremendous drive which sees only the end-point and admits of no distraction en route.

— 94 —
turn in fact - little statue of H G in every home in Germany. See p 99,

Famous as a giver of parties, Goering demonstrated

, ~~even~~

In the prison, Goering demonstrated his ability as a host and his friendliness to those ~~were~~ ^{were} not ~~stand~~ in his way. He ~~is~~ ^{was} the most cooperative of all the prisoners during interviews. He ~~is~~ ^{was} extremely grateful for any consideration and love ~~to~~ ^{to} sit on his cot and discuss for long periods any event which took place in the Third Reich. ^{Of course,} These discussions ~~usually~~ ^{usually} turned into monologues dealing ~~primarily~~ ^{his} with one hero -

Hermann Goering.

On spite of the grind of prison life,

Goering's moods were usually good and he loved to tell jokes, most of which were ~~extremely superficial~~ ^{One of} ~~and~~ not very funny but which he always enjoyed to the fullest, ~~laughing and slapping his hands on his knees~~ regardless of the joke's effect on anyone else. ^{ies} His

favorite story ^{ies} had to do with the difference between Germans and other people. ^{I never failed to be amused, not by the tale, but the teller.} He said, "If you have one

"Hermann would begin contentiously but with a twinkle in his eye. "If you have one German, German, you have a fine man; if you have two Germans

you have a bund; three Germans together result in a war. On the other hand, if you have one Englishman you have an idiot; two Englishmen immediately form a club; and when three Englishmen get together you have ^{Almost deep down within the big man there would be promontory rumblings of the} an Empire." Goering apparently thought very little

of his Italian colleagues for his story continued,

"One Italian is always a tenor; two Italians make a duet; when you get three Italians then you have a retreat."

At the final word his great mouth would open wide and a ⁹⁵⁻ bellow of laughter would issue. Eyes squeezed shut and shoulders shaking, he would raise his massive hands shoulder high and bring ^{laughter to come. He would control himself and continue:}

them down resoundingly on his heavy thighs. All the while, gusty
blasts of laughter escaped him.

I admit ^{that} the story ~~was~~ is not particularly funny, even
for a German, ^{and} ~~that~~ the explosion ^{that accompanied it} was less risible than
~~mocking~~ ridiculing ~~that such laughter~~ ^{were}, in fact, merely
~~an added~~ form of aggression for Goering.
additional

Of course,

Both story and

it seemed

relations with Hitler. He talked freely and apparently honestly of his

Goering admits ^{that} he had many differences with Adolf Hitler and states that, as time went on, their arguments became more and more serious. He ^{pointed out} ~~feels~~ that he was the only one who dared argue directly with Hitler during the latter years and ^{explained} ~~feels~~ that these arguments eventually led to Hitler's distrust for him. He states that everyone else, ^{he agreed,} used to ~~agree~~ ^{accept} ~~unquestioningly~~ ^{when} ~~wholeheartedly~~ with whatever Hitler said, and I remarked ~~pointed out~~ to him that, in America, Hitler's followers would be called "yes men"; Goering agreed very definitely, ^{Yes, yes} ~~with this~~, but then added, "That may well be, but please show me a 'no man' who is not six feet under ground (in Germany) today."

^{Goering} ~~He~~ apparently had a close attachment to Hitler — but a ^{unreasonable} ~~unreasonable~~ ^{this was no} ~~deep~~ ^{La cool, intellectual admiration for} ~~love~~ which was brought on not because of ~~any~~ ^{any} ~~deep~~ ^{unreasonable} ~~love~~ for his Fuehrer ~~but~~ ^{because he recognized} Hitler's organizational capacity and his uncanny ability to control ^{people en masse.} ~~the crowd~~ ^{once told me quite flatly} Goering states that he felt Hitler had a hypnotic effect on audiences and that when ~~he~~ and Hitler were driven through cheering groups, people would rush up to the ~~the~~ car in an almost hysterical state. Indeed, Goering ~~stated~~ ^{told of} ~~occasionally~~ women would be struck and knocked down by the vehicle, ^{who} ~~but~~ ^{arise and} would apparently not be concerned and would continue their wild cheering for the Fuehrer

of the regard he had ~~for the~~ ^{for his chief.}

in spite of their pain and obvious injury. Goering-

~~was unable to explain the cause for this enthusiasm,~~

No doubt Goering was pleased with Hitler's suicide since it opened the way to his own rise - though without power - to leadership. But the leadership abilities, reason he gave for approving) (was probably also valid and a measure

He is glad that Hitler ~~suicided and states,~~ "It

was not cowardly of Hitler to commit suicide because, ^{(as he explained to me one day, "}

after all, he was chief of the German State. It would

be absolutely unthinkable to me to have Hitler sitting

in a cell like this awaiting trial as a war criminal

before a foreign tribunal. ^{Though} ~~Even if~~ he hated me at the

end, he was, ^{for me} after all, a symbol of Germany. Even the

Japanese insisted upon not bringing their Emperor to

trial. [^] No matter how much harder it is to me now, I

would still rather suffer any consequence than to

have Hitler alive as a prisoner before a foreign court,

That is absolutely unthinkable." Apparently Goering

~~after all of his bluff, bravado, and direct drives~~

~~felt something more in Hitler than as a means to an end.~~

Now that he is the only individual left of the major Nazi hierarchy, Goering feels ^{great} some responsibility, not for its crimes, but for its historical evaluation. He was extremely glad when Dr. Ley committed suicide and stated, "It is just as well that he is dead because I had my doubts about how he would behave at the trial. He would have probably made a spectacle

of himself and would have tried to make^a/fantastic,
bombastic speech. It is a good thing that he got
himself out of the way." [Goering was also somewhat
concerned over Ribbentrop and ^{after} since the trial ^ahas begun
^{buckling up} has spent some time in influencing the former foreign
minister to make a strong stand and not break down with
a plea for mercy. Goering has ^{for} a contemptuous attitude
towards most of his colleagues, and would ^{he} be quite

willing to convict all ~~of the other Germans in them~~ of the most
^{heinous outrages} ~~prison~~ if by so doing he could ^{have} vindicate^d himself

in the eyes of the German people. There is no doubt
^{But he is not afraid to die for his "strategy."}
that he will complete his trial and face his sentence
with dignity. He states, "What is there to be afraid
about?" ^{"he once asked me"} After I have given orders to hundreds of thou-
sands of men to go into battle, frequently knowing
full well that many would not come back, plain soldiers
who had no choice in the matter, should I, their leader.
cringe when called upon to face the enemy? This is
just like going into battle and I will show them that
I can not only dish it out, but can take it as well.
I do not recognize this trial's legal jurisdiction, but
since they have the power to enforce it, I am prepared
to tell the truth and face anything that may come. One
by one they ~~are~~ breaking down. Ley commits suicide;
Kaltenbrunner gets sent to the hospital; Ribbentrop
loses his nerve. Not me!" ^{Hermann Goering has no fears}

tip 98

aim from the time he surrendered has been to
Goering's whole attitude is devoted towards
building up Hermann Goering for posterity. He
claims to have played a major part in Germany's
foreign affairs and feels that the entire Swedish
nation is profoundly indebted to him since he alone
prevented Hitler's invasion of this neutral country.
He also states ^{that if he had been given a free hand} ~~that if he had been given a free hand~~
he could have re-established his Luftwaff, and perhaps
the Germans might have won in the race for the develop-
ment of the atom bomb. | Speer, who was directly con-
cerned with these problems, ^{took} ~~took~~ a poor view of
Goering's enthusiasms and ^{complained, when I discussed Goering with him,} ~~states~~ that these out-
bursts were constantly getting everyone into
trouble. | On one occasion, Speer ^{said, he} ~~delivered~~ a new pilot
model of a jet-propelled plane to Goering. Goering
immediately took it to Hitler, and stated that some
500 of these aircraft had already been produced.
The resultant plan of use for the aircraft caused
considerable confusion, but Goering, instead of accept-
ing any responsibility for the mistake, merely blamed
Speer for not having produced the 500 aircraft, although
the basic model had not even yet been approved. Goering
does not feel that he ^{is} ~~is~~ a war criminal and challenged
the right of any tribunal to try him. He ^{actually never felt} ~~does not~~
feel that what we call war crimes are actually criminal.
He would simply call them "brilliant strategy".

men avoid such ends as this bare prison and the gallows. He went on: "But

from p 94 "9

~~We~~ made war, that is all)

To some degree Goering feels enmeshed in the world's problems. When asked why he had joined with a party to produce another war, he said, "As long as every nation has its selfish interests, you have to be practical."

"He stopped a moment and looked about his cell. It seemed he was realizing that "practical" I am a practical man, ~~but~~ I am also convinced that

there is a higher power which pushes men around in spite of all of their efforts to control their destiny."

This side of Goering seldom shows ^{ad} itself, but there is no doubt but this big, bulky man, one of the most ruthless human beings of all times, who has bludgeoned his way along a road to an end-point, at times realizes the futility of bucking against fate or a "higher power".

That ^{was} is the only time that I ~~have~~ ever ^{seen} Goering realize that he alone could not face and perhaps conquer the entire world.

Thus in his prison cell, Goering demonstrates ^d all of those personality characteristics which have ~~been~~ ^{make him what he was} typical of him throughout his life. He still maintained his extroverted reaction patterns, his need for attention, ^{the} his narcissistic bodily fixations. He daily demonstrated, ^{though restricted by prison environment,} even in the confines of his cell, his dominant drives, ^{ability to visualize clearly his} his clear-cut vision of a goal, and his willingness to attain ~~his~~ ^{his} end regardless of the cost. He possessed all the ~~characteristics of~~ ^{she} forcefulness, brutality, ruthlessness and lack of conscience which made him the ideal executive ^{for} Adolf Hitler in the control of the Third Reich.

CHAPTER III. THE SALESMEN

Every organization, once it has a product, must have experts who sell it to the people. ^(Got) Hitler, ^{had} Goebbels — who also helped set policy — sold it to the people, throwing in with each a nice little arrangement wherein his own policy ~~sale~~ ^{the added "plug"} planner, Goebbels, worked on his own countrymen, thereby insuring the principle that "the Führer is always right". Goebbels escaped us, but ^{his assistant,} ~~in storage~~ Fritsche, ^(Gave me) gave us considerable information on his old boss.

Hans Fritsche ^(one of three acquitted at Nuremberg) One of the more intelligent, and / at the same

time / least significant, of the entire group of criminals, in Hans Fritsche. He was born on April 21, 1900 at Bochum, Germany, attended elementary school and served as a soldier, ^{in the first world war,} entering the German Army at the age of 17.

^{After the war attended} Fritsche began ^{going} college studies in history and political economy, ^{In 1924 he} but eventually entered politics and, later in 1924 at the age of 23. Renouncing his studies, he

became a journalist, ^{through his work as a writer he} and through these contacts met Goebbels, and entered the Propaganda Ministry in 1933.

^{Later} He eventually, ^(Fritsche) was appointed Chief of the German Press Section and made frequent radio broadcasts. In 1942,

he became Reich Minister for Radio Propaganda, supervising all broadcasting in Greater Germany. *(During the war he made regular weekly broadcasts which was looked upon as*

^{own} Fritsche's broadcasts were ^{probably} particularly anti-Semitic, ^{penetrating an antipathy} in nature, a feeling which he developed

setting the tone for German propaganda

(as a veteran)
at college where ~~he~~ he felt that the
early in the school which he attended with many Jewish
students ~~when he felt~~ definitely dissociated themselves
from the German students. In spite of his ^{prejudice} feelings,
however, he tried to keep his own propaganda factual
~~and many times tried~~ ^{at} to have some of Streicher's
pornographic statements kept off the air.

Fritsche is a clear thinker, and realized that the
crimes against humanity ^{were} the most serious charges brought against
^{the Nazis at Nuremberg. He was}
~~He is~~ extremely bitter against Hitler, Himmler, Goering,
and Ribbentrop in particular. He ^{felt} ~~feels~~ that Goering
was not as responsible for the mass murders as the
others, ^{he told me he was} but ~~feels~~ certain that Goering was aware of
them and simply was unwilling to interest himself in
anything that made him uncomfortable or endangered
his position in the Reich.

Fritsche denied any knowledge of the atrocities
himself except that he was aware of certain plans of
Hitler, particularly Hitler's decision to kill all
captured Allied pilots following the Dresden bombing.
^{He claimed credit for}
Apparently Fritsche, working through Goebbels and
Ribbentrop, ^{to have this decision changed, and the proposed}
~~was able to achieve some result, for this~~
massacre never took place.

During the trial Fritsche acted as a rallying
point for those of the group who were essentially
against Goering's total leadership. Schacht,
Schirach, Speer and others ^{also} ~~seem~~ ^{ed} to have the ability

to gather about

to think for themselves and resented Goering's taking over and attempting to plan their defense for them.

I obtained much of the information I was able
Through Fritsche ~~we are able to find out about~~

Goebbels, who undoubtedly was one of the most intelligent of the entire group. Fritsche ~~feels~~ ^{maintained}, and his ~~opinion was~~ belief is backed by the ~~that~~ opinion of all the other conspirators, that Goebbels was of extremely high intelligence, well-educated, possessed of an excellent memory, original in his ideas and well-rounded in his knowledge of people. Fritsche points ^{ad} out that this many-sidedness of Goebbels and over-abundance of ~~constructive~~ abilities resulted ^{of which the Propaganda} Ministers was fully aware — accounted for his tendency to exaggerate his own ~~importance of his own opinion and his belittling of others.~~ Goebbels various ideologies to suit himself. He was quick to make decisions

accept a single opinion, and the word of one of his ^{if it agreed with his own view or helped crystallize it,} co-workers could become to Goebbels a classical expression of the belief of the entire nation. On the other hand, ~~he~~ ^{Goebbels} would frequently pass up what seemed to be the opinion of the multitude, and simply dismiss it with a wave of his hand. His statement that one must create and form the public opinion, thereby completely denying any real public expression, is typical of his ideas.

Fritsche also emphasized ~~Goebbels~~ Goebbels' extreme diligence, pointing out that during his entire life he worked systematically from earliest morning until late into the night. His work was well organized; and he performed a tremendous amount of it. He was incredibly well-informed.

~~While he~~ himself was an omnivorous reader, he had an entire staff assigned to abstract current ~~literature~~, ^{books, newspapers,} magazines, etc. for him.

^(emphasized) that Fritzsche ~~points out~~ this extreme drive and excellent organization was typical not only of Goebbels but also of Himmler, and between the two of them they con-

It was Fritzsche's ^(Goebbels' opinion that) ~~opinion that~~ ^(not held by Hitler) ~~Goebbels had a~~ crippled right leg which caused him to limp ~~considerably~~, and ^{his} short and fragile physique. ^{accounted for} Fritzsche feels that his desire to outgrow this natural handicap resulted in his extreme ambition and drive. ^(According to) Fritzsche, ~~points out that~~ Mrs. Goebbels, who was the divorced wife of ^a ~~the~~ rich manufacturer,

~~Quandt~~, was at first of great value to her husband in social and ~~helping him with his~~ diplomatic encounters. Later,

^{Fritzsche confirmed the universal opinion that} they became estranged, ~~and~~ Goebbels was ~~certainly~~

^(Before the final estrangement of this pair) ~~not inclined to~~ marital faithfulness. ^(let called upon) Hitler frequently ~~had~~ to settle things between them.

^{Probably} ~~simply could not have been a kind husband and father. He~~ Goebbels possessed a definite sadistic streak

and frequently utilized sarcasm, cruel jokes and mock-

ery not only in his speeches but in his ^(direct, without flattery at) ~~contacts with~~

^(his anger and dramatic in its expression) ~~his co-workers. He was quick tempered and frequently~~

^(the form of) ~~expressed anger through~~ long monologues which were so classically developed that strangers ^(overhearing his tirade) often believed he

was acting rather than actually emotionally stirred.

^(Goebbels) ~~his whole~~ attitude towards his friends was ~~one of~~

^{characterized by}

coldness, that toward his subordinates by

old discipline, and one seldom heard a word of praise

for ^{for} his associates. He was not really liked by the ^(who knew him) people in general but ^{he} was ^(with the public) extremely popular, because

he moved freely among them, of his frequent associations with them, especially during the period of the bombings. ^{Apparentlly} all Germans admitted the high caliber of his warped intellect. His ability to

^{3 speeches} speak is well known and his writings demonstrate his ^(for all the world)

uncanny skill in deviating from the truth, but still maintaining an appearance of perfect logic. His influence with Hitler developed continuously during the course of the Third Reich, until at the end, Goebbels alone of the original group remained in favor.

Goebbels at the very end withdrew into his shelter and refused to see any of his previous associates. Apparently he was primarily concerned at this time with Hitler's suicidal decisions and the only time Fritzsche saw him after April 21 was when he and his children were laid out in the morgue as corpses.

These opinions of Fritzsche give an excellent portrayal of Joseph Goebbels, the mouthpiece of Hitler, and undoubtedly the most intelligent of the inner group of the Nazi hierarchy.

^{though} ^{apparentlly} valued Goebbels highly, he ^{(Hitler, however,} considered it more essential to sell his ideas to the youth than to the adults. While Goebbels and his assistants bombarded the public in general, a special set-up was organized

Baldur-dash

to handle the youth ~~development~~ and insure its absorption of Nazi ideology. For this important position, Hitler in 1932 appointed Baldur Benedekt von Schirach, only a youth himself, who had been swept off his feet in mad admiration for the Fuehrer.

Schirach was born in Berlin on the 9th of May, 1907, ^{He} ~~was~~ ^{was} the youngest of the criminals on trial. His ancestry is interesting because of its relationship with America.

Schirach's great-grandfather, Frederick von Schirach, fought as an American officer in the Fifty-fourth New York Volunteer Regiment and was severely wounded in the Battle of Bull Run. He served ^{thereafter} as a major and adjutant on the general staff (although he had lost a leg in this battle,) and in 1865 was ~~an~~ one of the honor guard at the bier of the assassinated President Lincoln. ~~His wife was~~ ^{He had married in Philadelphia} Elizabeth Norris of Baltimore ^{and Philadelphia.} The Norris family had originally come from France and were the owners of a locomotive factory in Philadelphia.

~~Schirach~~ ^{After the Civil War the von Schirachs moved to,} Schirach's father was born in Kiel where the father of Baldur ~~was born.~~ ^{was born.} This von Schirach, an American by birth, family had moved and his father acquired German citizenship and became a ~~professional~~ officer in the Imperial Guard. He ~~had~~ married an Emma Tillen in Philadelphia and, had it not been for his acquisition of German citizenship, von Schirach would have been an American citizen himself.

Schirach grew up in Weimar and early in his life demonstrated considerable interest in both outdoor sports and ^{the} artistic achievements. ~~He~~ wrote a number of poems, some of which were published in 1927. He studied German and English literature at the University of Munich, ^{and} His political activities had begun somewhat earlier but became especially important at this time and he became head of the entire Hitler youth in 1932 at the age of 25. He married Henriette Hoffman, ~~the~~ daughter of Hitler's photographer, when she was only 18 and they ~~have~~ had three sons.

*Put into German
Gerd
over*

Schirach was never especially anti-Semitic during his early life, but at the age of 17 he read ~~Henry Ford's alleged book, "Eternal Jew," which influenced him profoundly.~~ The next year he met Julius Streicher ^{was swayed by him and others who shared his views} and since many of his old friends at social gatherings were anti-Semitic, he accepted these opinions as authoritative. ^{also} He met Hitler at this time and was profoundly inspired by him. As a matter of fact, one of the reasons ^{my} why he selected Munich for his studies was because ^I he knew it was Hitler's headquarters. He ^{Party's} became one of the ~~most~~ staunchest supporters and

You must believe me - I
was a convinced anti-Semite until the end of the war. ^{until the end of the war -} He apparently firmly believed in these principles ^{and} *imagine* how ^{I was then} somewhat astounded to discover that Ford had withdrawn his writings ^(many years ago) and that the Protocols of Zion were forgeries. Could I have been anti-Semitic if I had known those two facts? I do not know.

He took which in Germany (understandable) was attributed to the American automobile mfg. H.F.

This is the story of his career as Schirach told it to me:

"As a ^{boy} youth I was not politically minded, being instead a devotee of literature and, in particular, poetry. When I was 17, however, I got hold of the book, Eternal Jew, by your great automobile manufacturer, Hood. This book opened a new world to me, and profoundly influenced me.

"Some time after reading this book, while still filled with its revelations about International Jewry, I first met Strachey whose opinions about the Jew you know. They are even stronger medicine for an impressionable youth than ~~the~~ those expressed in Eternal Jew.

"After meeting Strachey I became even more engrossed in political problems. I neglected my literary friends and consorted only with political thinkers, most of whom spoke of the Jews as Strachey did. Among friends who assumed that all Jews were evil, and all the ills of Germany were fostered by the Jews, I came naturally and without question to think and feel as they did. My convictions were only more firmly set when one of my new associates brought me to read the Protocols of Zion.

"Then I met Hitler. I was young, impressionable, romantic, filled with an eager zeal to destroy Germany's enemies and restore my Fatherland to its rightful greatness. Hitler, in his speeches and in his person, inspired me profoundly. I wanted only to be near him, to serve him and, thereby, serve Germany, that was all I thought of, all I dreamed.

I do know that I ~~learned soon~~ not to place too much credence in Streicher's exaggerated accounts of Jewish rottenness, I know that he himself was ~~white~~, and that there was other evil within the Party, but I had taken Nazism as my religion in my youth when I was idealistic,

Consequently, Schirach is probably one of the most upset of the group since he entered the Nazi party as a youth, eager, enthusiastic and easily led. It was not easy for me to believe who consequently discovered that all the Nazi promises were fake. ^{But, in spite of my Party loyalty and my conformed, intellectual} He is quite frank about his anti-Semitism, ^{I never} feelings although he denies participation in any actual atrocities. ^{He did, however, (in one speech)} approve the Viennese evacuation ^{of Jews, but only} in a speech which he made at Hitler's suggestion. He states that he is prepared to die for his guilt. ^{Then} When all the atrocities came to light at the end of the war, ^{my} his worst fears were realized. It is true that ^{was going} he had had some glimmering of what went on in 1942. At that time ^I for both ^{my} his wife and he had ^{argued with Hitler, himself against} discussed the problem of the deportation of the Jews with Hitler, himself. ~~At this time~~ Hitler became exceedingly excited and ^{us out} ordered the Schirachs from his house. ^{We were sure} They felt ^{me} that they would be arrested, but nothing came of it — except that Schirach was ^{after that} gradually dropped from party activity. "When the war ended, and I knew how my Party and my Führer had robbed At the end of the war Schirach states, "I would not commit suicide like a coward. I did not even evade arrest. ^(Instead) I proposed to American authorities that all youth leaders be called together for a re-education program and that I would deliver myself as hostage to take the consequences of our earlier blind mistake. I hoped in that way to make good somehow for what I had done."

Germany of honor by all the atrocities, I was most upset. I studied what I should do. I know my own responsibility was great and I felt I should try to make what I had done some of the evil.

(In this statement, one must realize, that Schirach made out the best case he could for Schirach. ~~But~~ With that in mind and with all the information on him I had obtained from other sources, I concluded that here was good material gone for wrong.)

Schirach ^{was} highly intelligent, ^{of} great imaginative powers with a tremendous activity and drive. ^(Only) He organized the youth along the theory that "youth must lead youth". ^{In fact, he claimed that slogan as his own,} a statement which he claims to have originated, although it has been widely attributed to Hitler. ^{Schirach (German) virtually single-handed. He} When he organized ~~the~~ youth group, he ~~did~~ ^{did} it ^{chiefly} ~~primarily~~ by travelling ^(by plane, train and auto) continuously and ^{regularly} visiting all of his subordinates, never directing affairs from single headquarters. He always maintained personal contact with the youth, visiting their camps and places of work. ^(once boasted to me) He states that there is hardly a town or village in Germany which he has not visited ^{and} ~~long distance trips were made by plane.~~ During meetings he gave directives by means of speeches ^{He also set up a} and ~~in~~ ^{under which} a system whereby once a month all district leaders met ^{in a single group} either ~~at his headquarters~~ or some other place for personal discussions. ^{Each meeting enabled him to check personally on his subordinates and give them his orders by word of mouth.}

This tremendous personal activity of Schirach is one of the reasons why he was able to weld German youth into such a strong body in so short a period. ^{But not all his success can be attributed to him personally.} ~~On the other hand,~~ we must not forget that the ~~backing~~ ^{backing} authority, rules and laws ^{of the Nazi Party} permitted him to carry out activities prohibited to any other youth movement. ^[Schirach, with the backing of Hitler] seized the property and equipment of all other youth organizations and literally forced other youth movements

None the less
Certainly
to come under his control. *by suited to* He was an ideal person
for this task *in that* he was young and enthusiastic,
possessed *of* a fanatical devotion for Hitler, and his
principles *Moreover, he* had ~~an~~ apparently *inexhaustible* source of
physical and mental energy. *Finally,* ~~he~~ he was of good family,
handsome, a young man of ~~literary~~ and well educated, *In addition, he had a*
keen imagination and considerable creative *and literary* ability, ~~as~~
~~demonstrated by his writings and his poetry.~~

I know the rumors that have been whispered about Schirach's offmaturity.

There is no evidence of any homosexual friends in

expand
this individual, ~~in spite of many of the assertions of~~
~~that he was the stoutest foe of sexual aberrations among the Hitler youth.~~ *And he pointed*
~~his enemies. He himself maintains that the bringing~~
out that his policy of bringing
~~of~~ young men and women together in various harmless
contacts *"did much to"* ~~were of considerable value in cutting down~~
He himself married early and urged his aids to do so. He felt
the rate of homosexuality in Germany. ~~He feels all~~

that "leaders of youth must marry early since unmarried
youth leaders arouse suspicion." *He admits that there*
~~were certain~~ occasional homosexual incidents ~~through~~ *occurred*
among the Hitler youth, but he ~~waged~~ *initiated* constant war
against these persons and felt that towards the end
the Hitler youth was completely cleared of such
elements.

He is a very intense, enthusiastic personality, *Schirach maintained*
throughout and believes that ~~the~~ German youth can be remodeled
through education from America. *But* He emphasized that
such educators should be young themselves in order to
appeal to the German youth. *assured me* He feels that his basic

training plans could be used but, ^{he advised} that sports and games should be directed towards non-combative ends ^{and} rather than along lines of training which he employed. He ~~assumes that church organizations will develop groups and that athletic and hiking units will also form.~~

He feels that such ^{the} units should be encouraged as they develop and emphasizes that ^{numerous youth} all groups must remain non-political ^{basis}. He admits that this ^{he} thought ^{advice is the opposite of that} is in total conflict with his ^{he gave his own Nazi youth leaders, but} previous policy which was governed only by political considerations. He maintains, ^{ed} however, ^{whereas} that, under the Nazi Party set-up, a single political group was ideal, but in view of the changed situation at present he believes ^{non-political} multiple groups should develop which would give youth its best possible opportunity ^{to outgrow} its Nazi indoctrination.

Schirach feels ^{he} very deeply upset because he led the youth of Germany to believe in the ideals of the Nazi Party. ^{His only excuse was that} He himself believed ^{what he taught,} these ideals and

states that youth as a whole is not guilty but merely followed in his footsteps. He feels that the youth of Germany ^(for following in Schirach's footsteps, and he insisted that he) should not be punished and is willing to accept the

blame and pay any price which may be demanded. ^{After months of almost-daily discussions, I} ~~He~~ ^{concluded that Schirach's} emotional reactions ^{were} are quite genuine and his feelings of guilt ^{But his convictions were still those of a romantic easily led.} are profound. ^{He is still, however, the}

enthusiastic juvenile, ^{in nature since it is obvious} ~~in nature since it is obvious~~ ^{No mature intellect would} total abolition could be achieved for ^{years of scientific work} cannot be achieved ^{of the youth of Germany} by the Nazi Party cannot ^{Schirach's death means nothing.} be eliminated. It is quite reasonable for Schirach to sacrifice himself and pay the price for his faulty

leadership, but it will actually require years of re-education before the basic doctrines of Nazi philosophy will be ~~ir~~^eradicated from the minds of younger ^{thful} German~~s~~.

selling his Party and program within Germany,
In addition to ~~sales within the country~~, Hitler ^(consider) had to ~~do a considerable bit of~~ foreign ^{acceptance} merchandising as well. ^{For this campaign he needed} Here he wanted smooth, clever, unscrupulous types but not ^{such} ^{men} shift^y that he, himself, could not trust them. ^{It is patent that} ^{men in the foreign service} He inherited ^{were of this sort,} ~~Since some of his former~~ diplomats ^{fell} ~~into this group,~~ ^{but he discovered his own chief diplomat} he developed his diplomatic chief along special lines. He wanted for this position a fanatical ^{Hiltelke, one} follower who made a good appearance but whose creative thought was limited to parroting the Fuehrer's words. The master salesman also had to be able to sell, ^{not the} ~~the~~ customer, a function that ^{ed a ready} ~~the product, a technique requiring primarily~~ change of approach depending mostly on the war potentialities of the customer. Hitler's choice for this task, Joachim von Ribbentrop, was eminently satisfactory.

Of all the Nazi war criminals, von Ribbentrop demonstrates the greatest degree of insecurity and tension. ^{As he passed his latter} ~~In his~~ cell, he ^{del}reminds one of a child, intelligent but definitely immature, who has been cut off completely from his parents. ^{(to the war's end & what followed,} ~~This reaction~~ is understandable if we realize the deep attachment

~~and~~ Ribbentrop ^{had} (and realize - as I came to do while studying him - that he felt for his father, whose place was later taken directly by Hitler, had been a direct father substitute for the little boy,

Ribbentrop's father was a soldier, who undoubtedly ^{but one obviously} Ribbentrop. ~~of wide range of interest, capable of unselfishness and holding a son's affection~~ ^{had considerable versatility of interest} Ribbentrop, on one occasion, speaking very freely with me, said:

states, "My feelings towards my father were such that I liked and admired him more than anyone else in this world, except my wife and children. There has never been a change in our relations since my childhood, I always had a very free exchange ^{with him} on all subjects and ^[on Jan. 1, 1941] felt his death far more than I can express."

Ribbentrop's father died on the 1st of January, 1941. His mother, ~~however~~ ^{of tuberculosis} died when he was only about eleven years of age, and he had only a vague childhood recollection of her. He ~~thinks of her~~ ^{remembered} ^{only} as a very sweet, delicate and suffering woman who was in bed most of the time. Because of her illness, the children were usually kept away from her and therefore knew little about her. Ribbentrop consequently grew up without a mother's guidance during his adolescence and this accounts, ^{to} ~~to~~ some degree, for his firm paternal attachment.

In 1920 ^{Ribbentrop} ^(daughter of ...) he married Elise Henkell, ^(assured me) to whom he became profoundly attached, and he states that their life together had been "full of ^{and} happiness and harmony as is seldom given to two human beings." This attachment ^{was} ~~was~~ obviously shared by ^{and} Ribbentrop's wife, ~~is~~ shown by her faithfulness to

him even during his ^{days of indignity} ~~fall from power~~. Frau Ribbentrop

^{was} ~~is~~ a most common visitor at the Jail; and although she ~~was~~
^{until she was released from prison and of being able to} ~~is~~ unable to see her husband, ^{wait} ~~wait~~ patiently for many

^{was} ~~was~~ hours to obtain even a mere word from him. Of all the
wives of the war criminals, she ^{was} ~~has been~~ one of the most
actively concerned in planning and aiding his defense.

^{for more than a year} ~~As one~~ watches Frau Ribbentrop secure lawyers and evi-
dence for her husband, the feeling ^{grows} ~~grows~~ that she ~~is~~ ^{is} was
replacing his mother. This impression ^{was strengthened} ~~is emphasized~~
by one of Ribbentrop's physicians who ^{held me he held} ~~observed~~ ^{that} the same
Frau Ribbentrop throughout their entire marriage, ~~had~~

taken the part of a mother. She apparently not only
supervized her home with an iron hand, but was influ-
ential in hiring and firing Ribbentrop's valet, chauff-
eur, personal physicians, and even the members of
his foreign staff. She, as well as Ribbentrop, ~~is~~
^{was, in fact,} ~~intensely ambitious and it is~~ largely through her ef-
forts that Hitler became interested in her husband.

^{Certainly} It may be that ~~she felt~~ ^{Frau Ribbentrop knew how weak her husband was and how greatly} he needed assistance, ~~for~~
^{own} ~~her~~ mother ^{did} ~~has~~ ^{from Herr} ~~frequently~~ ^{comment on} been known to state how
extremely odd it was "that of all ^{my} ~~her~~ sons-in-law,
the most foolish became the most prominent".

Ribbentrop himself must have had some doubt as to
his own ability to compete in the big business of
international relationships and this inferiority

feeling undoubtedly accounts to a large degree for the dramatic ego-centric displays which he put on in public.

The Ribbentrop
His background was certainly inadequate for a skilled

diplomat, since he only completed elementary school and

was then trained in languages, *(— and some stage skills —)* and learned his English

in London and in Canada. His record in the ^{First World} War was

not outstanding, although ~~it is true~~ he was suffering

from tuberculosis at the time. Apparently this ill-

ness was cleared and, after serving in the war ministry

and acting on the staff of the peace conference, he

entered private business in the import^{ing} and exporting

of liquors. *(At first Ribbentrop was)* He undoubtedly entered this liquor

business more as a ^{means} method of livelihood, than as a

(as he made bigger money and more important friends, he found he) satisfaction to his desires, but, was able to utilize

his products as a technique of gaining valuable

(connections) friends in high places. During this *(the early Twenties)* period in Germany,

liquor was difficult to obtain and we find frequent

(began deliberately to win) examples of Ribbentrop's ~~gaining~~ friendships through

his ability to secure rare vintages, for worthwhile

friends. *(Socially as well as financially, and his)* He was apparently successful in his ~~commer-~~

~~business~~ remained an asset. He never relinquished even

social enterprises and has never denied his connection

~~after it had brought him political power and prestige.~~ with this business. As a matter of fact, he has contin-

ued his activity in spite of the *(snide)* condemning remarks of

his political opponents who labelled him a better

(an excellent) champagne salesman, ~~than a diplomat.~~ *(As a matter of fact, he claimed that it)* Through a special

commission of Hitler, ^{that} he was allowed to retain manage-

ment of his firm. *(of course, this maneuver paid well)*

financially and has allowed Ribbentrop to refuse to ~~function~~^{ad} without ~~accept any salary for his work as foreign minister.~~

He was extremely proud of ~~this donation~~^{of his services} to the German Government, ~~and has only utilized his salary~~^{boasting that he religiously turned back to the Reich all his salary except actual governmental expenses.} in expenses or turned it back to the Reich.

Even though ~~a successful business man~~^{explained that his}, he constantly interested ~~himself~~^{Ribbentrop} in politics and his restless energies and never-tiring ambitions ~~drove him on~~^{grew out of his import-export business} into political contacts. ~~He developed a broad view-~~^{but I am confident it had other roots as well - in his feelings of inferiority which fostered} point of German problems through his business trips abroad, and in early 1930 became ~~in national socialism.~~^{interested}

He did not hold an official position until 1934, and he gradually increased the scope of his activity until ~~he received his first major position~~^{was appointed to a state minor official} it reached his first big call, his appointment as ambassador ~~to London, in 1936.~~^{ship} ~~His political activities~~^{there} have been amply described in other biographies, but it is important to realize that ~~in Ribbentrop~~^{is} ~~we have an~~^{was}

individual suffering from feelings of inferiority, who ~~is seeking power in an over-compensatory drive.~~^{sought} ~~He~~^{in this way} resembled Hitler, ~~along this line and after his first only one~~^{to whom} meeting with the Fuehrer ~~became~~^{he} ~~very attached to him.~~^{emotionally}

Ribbentrop's wife furthered the attachment by giving frequent parties for the coming Fuehrer. Hitler was much impressed with the furnishings and surroundings of the Ribbentrops, and a ~~considerable amount of his~~^{fair share} cultural appreciation was developed through the ~~attitudes were no doubt the result of~~

*Mutually complementary in political aptitudes
and cultural attainments,*

coaching
patient teachings of Frau Ribbentrop. Consequently,
the Ribbentrops and Hitler developed a close personal
relationship which finally resulted in the appoint-
ment of von Ribbentrop as foreign minister.

With his ascendancy to power, Ribbentrop, who
must have at times realized his own inadequacies,
developed an attitude which prevented any type of
criticism and aggression against it. He surrounded
himself with loyal followers and ~~in public~~ *in public*
an air of arrogance and disdain which totally repelled
any personal approach. *[This attitude, of course,*
eventually carried *over* ~~on~~ *and to the treatment of his*
into his own office, staff, ~~and one~~ *and one*
of his assistants *told me* ~~tells us~~ that he was extremely domineer-
ing. "He would enter a room as though he were descend-
ing from a cloud and then suddenly, with a start of
surprise, notice that other mere human beings were in
the room as well. He treated us like dogs. He would
require his entire staff to line up at an airport and
wait for hours until the plane bearing Ribbentrop
arrived. *[*"We would then all line up at the door,
Ribbentrop would appear and greet us with a frozen
smile, raise his hand in *the heiling* ~~gesture~~ and rapidly enter
his private car to be driven ~~to his destination~~ *off*. We,
who had perhaps been waiting five or six hours, would
then find our cars and drive after him. *[*"If Mrs. Frau
Ribbentrop happened to be *traveling with him* ~~along~~ it was essential *required*

that every married member of the staff had his wife at the airport as well to greet her, and under-secretaries ^{many times all the} frequently recall ^{and waiting for hours} standing in the pouring rain, ^{just so} for hours that the Ribbentrops might be guaranteed a welcome worthy of their statusⁿ.

Ribbentrop was extremely theatrical in his reactions and frequently was called "the movie actor" because of his studied gestures. His technique of arm raising when he "heiled" Hitler was strictly individual and members of his staff are certain that ^{several} ^(assured me with conviction) the Ribbentrops ^{saluted} in its flawless and apparently casual perfection, had ^{it} required countless hours of practice before a mirror, for its flawless and apparently casual execution. ^{No doubt!} ^{Ribbentrop's} Perhaps some of his dramatic reactions stem from his early ^{training} activities in drama as a student. Like many actors, he was extremely temperamental, being graciously ~~friendly~~ one moment and shouting and cursing his staff the next. He was meticulous in his ^{style} was an extension of his personality. In consequence he required his clothing and apparently felt that members of the foreign staff ^{to} ^{adorned with} should be equipped with special uniforms and numerous medals. ^{At any rate} he and Hitler ^{these} designed all the uniforms for his staff, and when any social event was planned, Ribbentrop would prepare a lengthy memorandum, detailing precisely what was to be worn, even to the ^{proper} collar button. ^{who had little more than scorn for the clothes horse Ribbentrop,} Goering described Ribbentrop's behaviour ^{in this fashion} as follows: "He was a boundlessegotist - a wine salesman

who was successful in business, but had neither the background nor the tact for diplomacy. [" I tried to advise Hitler to remove him, for two reasons: First of all, he was persona non grata to the British, and even Hitler wanted to keep on good terms with the British. They disliked Ribbentrop because of that stupid tactlessness. [" He had hardly gotten off the train when he went on his mission to London, before he started giving them expert advice on controlling the balance of power against Russia, completely insensitive to the [fact that the British considered themselves ~~the~~ experts on power politics and were trying to give us advice on protecting ourselves in the East. [" Then, upon presentation to the king, he greeted him with the "Heil Hitler" salute, which the British, of course, regarded as an insult to the crown. I was ~~was~~ even able to make Hitler see that point. 'Suppose Russia sent a good-will ambassador to you', I said, "and he came and greeted you with "Long live the communist revolution!"', " Here Goering raised his fist in the communist salute and laughed heartily.

"The second reason was that Ribbentrop didn't have the background for international diplomacy. Hitler was in no position to judge this, because he had never travelled abroad himself. Just because the wine merchants Ribbentrop associated with

happened to include some English Counts, Hitler thought he had a man with 'connections'. I told Hitler that if he wanted to have any dealings with England he could do much better through my connections - with Lord Halifax, for example. ["] But in spite of his ignorance, Ribbentrop was as arrogant as a peacock about his position. Just imagine! at the time of the signing of the Axis pact with Japan and Italy, with the news-

There is more than the evident depreciation of one Hitler, lacking for another in that matter (comment) Recall, if you will, the significance of the Tokyo-Berlin-Rome Axis pact and realize that this took making - this was - was signed, sealed
reels, and all that, he wanted me - the second man in the Reich - to stand behind him in approval! Can you imagine the gall? I told him that if I did pose with him, I would sit down and he could stand behind me. But I didn't want to be in it altogether, because I hadn't read the pact yet, and might take exception to it later, only to find that I had identified myself with it. "

and recorded by cinema without being read even by the Number Two German!
Ribbentrop's relationship to ^{his Fuehrer} Hitler was one of true worship. Hitler undoubtedly replaced Ribbentrop's father in his scheme of life. This relationship ~~is a~~ commented on by everyone who worked with Ribbentrop, and his under-secretaries invariably mention his glowing attitude following every interview with the Fuehrer. ^{ad} Hitler apparently realized his hold on Ribbentrop and used it for all it was worth. He was also apparently cognizant of the fact that, while utterly devoted, Ribbentrop seldom had a

whatever his qualities as a statesman, was none the less a loyal Hitlerite. His

Before 1941, however, Ribbentrop would occasionally argue with Hitler before accepting his orders as final. Then

good original idea but would carry out any order of Hitler's to the fullest. At times, however, Ribbentrop would argue with Hitler but in 1941 Hitler put an end to all further such ^{opposition} antagonisms. This incident occurred

during a discussion Hitler had with Ribbentrop over the award of a decoration. It seems ^{that} Ribbentrop ^{— who told me the story} had

designed and awarded a decoration for his foreign office and that Hitler was now planning to create a new award which would result in Ribbentrop's original

decoration becoming ^{and finally} only a second-class one. They argued a bit and the argument then spread generally

^{with great feeling —} until Hitler accused Ribbentrop of constantly haranguing and disagreeing with him. Ribbentrop ^{shouted back} became excited and

stated that if this was Hitler's opinion he would leave the position of foreign minister. Apparently Ribbentrop

had used this somewhat childish argument at other times

and Hitler had had enough of it. ^{In any event,} Hitler ^{collapsed} became quite

^{and,} excited, sat in a chair holding his head in his hands,

told Ribbentrop that he was about to die, and accused

Ribbentrop of killing him. ^{For an hour the stricken Fuesher, actually} Ribbentrop states that ^{looking frightfully ill, held forth recapitulating all} Hitler dilated for over an hour on their previous dis-

agreements and the arguments they had had over treaties

and problems in occupied territories. ^{With all Ribbentrop's sins recounted,} Hitler then

^{his ungrateful foreign minister} announced that Ribbentrop could leave but that he,

Hitler, was about to have a stroke, that his ears were ringing, that he felt faint, that he would die

and that Joachim von Ribbentrop must be considered the direct cause of the death of the Fuehrer and the total collapse and failure of the German Nation.

Although Hitler's dramatics sound a bit "corny" on the retelling, Ribbentrop was apparently profoundly upset. He begged the Fuehrer's pardon and with considerable dramatics on his own part swore an oath of fidelity to his Fuehrer, stating that regardless of any decision Hitler might make, he would ^{henceforth} always stand firmly behind him.

After this incident there were numerous occasions when Ribbentrop felt that Hitler's policies were not the soundest, but he ^{said, sorrowfully,} ~~states~~ that, whenever he was about to object to any of Hitler's decisions, the vision of Hitler's face, strained and pale and haggard as it was on that fateful day, would float before his eyes and ^{and dissuade him.} ~~from that time on he never at any time disagreed with Adolf Hitler, because he believed he~~ ^{that any protest by him} might actually cause ^{Hitler's} ~~his~~ death through a stroke or a profound emotional shock. This somewhat simple belief was apparently firmly ^{grounded in} ~~borne into the soul of~~ Ribbentrop. ^{Even} ~~For~~ in the Nuremberg Jail, during the early period of his captivity, he ^{was still} ~~represented~~ the staunchest supporter of the Fuehrer.

Perhaps one of the best views of Ribbentrop's life is given by one of his secretaries who was with

(We find also — and I preserve it for the record — a curiously inconsistent use of the present tense. Though her chief was facing almost certain execution, his Ministry and its "Greater German Reich" already dissolved, this loyal woman insists still on speaking as if the Nazis still ruled and Ribbentrop still stood, a loyal servant, at ~~the~~ ^{des} Fuehrer's side.

In this summary we find Ribbentrop well portrayed. ^{Ribbentrop perhaps more of a} ~~to his doctors~~ ^{than even his secretary readily} ~~he was~~ ^{for years} a considerable problem, ~~he suffered~~ ^{had} from a functional weakness of the left facial nerve with resulting neuralgic pains and occasional drooping of the left eyelid. He ~~visited~~ ^{called in} a number of physicians, requested ~~for~~ ^{ed} their advice, ~~secured~~ ^{obtained} their medicine and then paid no attention whatsoever to them, stating that he knew more about ^{his affliction} ~~it~~ than they did. This ~~attitude was verified when~~ ^{behavior was repeated in prison where} Ribbentrop gave a long, detailed, but garbled, opinion of what was troubling him to the American medical officers.

His physicians also commented on how easily his mood was influenced following contact with Hitler. If a considerable space of time occurred when he was not ordered to appear before the Fuehrer, his mood ~~was~~ ^{got} ~~became~~ ugly. As soon as he ^{was} ~~called~~, his mood underwent a change for the better with rapidity. After his return from his interview, he was jovial, and extremely talkative. ^{It was as if} ~~to the extent that one could say that~~ ^{he had} "met with God."

His physicians remarked frequently on his tactless, tyrannical and intolerant attitude ^{toward} ~~against~~ opinions other than his own. He took a positive delight in making people wait for him for long periods and frequently would require a foreign minister from another country to wait in his ~~office~~ ^{anteroom} daily over a period of weeks before he could find time to see him.

I first visited Ribbentrop's cell

Ribbentrop

During his period of power he is described by his physicians as being an individual with whom personal contact was impossible. He created an icy atmosphere around himself and became unapproachable in order to impress others of his importance. This attitude dissipated rapidly following his capture. His physicians also commented on the important place his wife played in controlling his life.

When first seen in the Nuremberg Jail, he was depressed, uncontrolled and almost helpless. This ~~my~~ ^{my condition chiefly to} ~~might be anticipated in view of~~ the fact that he had been cut off from his emotional sustenance. He could not communicate with his wife, and his Fuehrer was dead. When first seen he seemed unable to make up his mind on any point and was extremely disorganized. His cell was easily the most untidy in the entire jail, being littered with little piles of papers scattered ^{everywhere. He seemed unable} over its entire area. He constantly requested interviews with anyone and everyone and during an interview ^{with him, he} would ask innumerable questions, but apparently paid no attention whatsoever to ^{my} ~~my~~ ^{my replies.} Shortly he would repeat the question. When he got an idea he worried it to death. ^{In surface matters, he} A solution might be presented but he could not accept it until it had undergone countless repetitions. He is very polite and cordial and constantly flatters the interviewer in an attempt to find out what people really think of him. He was

a clever individual but not brilliant, having only average intellectual ability. He ^{was} able, however, in conversation to feel one out and ^{showed himself adept in} frequently ^{laying} traps in order to gain some piece of information. ^{Whenever the} ^{turned to} ^{ame} in his conversation about Hitler he becomes positively fanatical, ^{being} extremely enthusiastic, ^{emphatic} in his declaration: "I have and states that he has always stood behind the Fuehrer and always will." ^{always} He immediately adds, however, that although he ^{had} stood with Hitler on everything, ^{"I} he had nothing to do with the policy and ^{is} I am not guilty of any of the crimes."

^{One day during the trial} Following the showing of certain motion pictures ^{were shown,} in court which included several scenes of Hitler during his active period, ^{ing} Ribbentrop, ^{afterward in his cell} seized me by the arm and ^{shook it,} said, "Can't you feel his personality?" ^{he asked breathlessly. I was silent and he looked for a} ^{moment.} ^{whose face was} ^{literally aglow} ^{with remembered} ^{glory,} Perhaps it is not conveyed through the screen.

But I can feel him myself, ^{however} - his strong, vital personality." ^{He then added:} "Even though I am here in jail on trial for my life, if Hitler were to walk into this room at this moment and command anything, I would do it immediately without thought of consequence." ^{this} ^{real. It was strikingly} His devotion to Hitler was ^{demon-}strated when, ^{Ribbentrop} having left Berlin during the latter part of April, ^{he} telegraphed Hitler on the 27th of April, requesting permission to return to the Capital to die beside his Fuehrer. ^{He received,}

~~even the rude~~
however, a rather rude shock ^{of} when Hitler's will ~~was~~
~~read~~. In ~~Hitler's~~ ^{his} last testament, ^{of his Fuehrer,} Ribbentrop was
not mentioned and the position of Foreign Minister
was given to Seyss-Inquart. When Ribbentrop heard
about this, he became completely stupified and
totally upset. At first he refused to believe that
he had been left out; he felt certain that Hitler
must have given him a better position. When it
became obvious that his name was not mentioned,
he ~~then felt~~ ^{considered himself} that Bormann or Goebbels had prepared
a false will or perhaps that Hitler had become insane
or had signed the will not knowing its contents.
^{When he first heard the will read, his first question was an unbelieving,}
~~He stated,~~ "Didn't it mention my name anywhere,
anywhere at all?!" Then he became quite excited and ^{hysterical,}
^{recalling that} ~~and commented on~~ Hitler's statement ^{on} at his fiftieth
birthday anniversary ~~when Hitler~~ named him as the
most sincere and loyal of his followers. Finally,
he decided that perhaps Hitler really had not men-
tioned him - it took almost two hours of reitera-
tion of this fact before it sank in - and then he
became hysterical. "It makes me very bitter. I
gave him everything. I was loyal, I always stood
up for him. It was very hard. I stood his temper,
I took everything he gave me, and then he just
chucked me out. It makes me very bitter. This
hurts me more than anything else he could have done."

This ~~attitude of~~ rejection by his Fuehrer ~~has~~ ^{later, in his} apparently weighed seriously upon his mind and, ~~in the~~ testimony ~~reported from Nuremberg~~, we find him ^{questioning} drifting from his theory that Hitler was the ideal man and, for the first time, placing the blame for the state of the Third Reich on Adolf Hitler.

There is no doubt that Ribbentrop ^{did} ~~has~~ not deteriorated in ~~prison~~, in spite of his chronic complaints, his inability to make up his mind, his loose talk, his depression and his emotional vacillations. ^{He was not insane} ~~to a state of insanity~~. He ^{became, instead,} ~~is~~ the typical ~~picture of a~~ "rat in a trap", an individual who, without the actual basic ^{abilities} ~~requirements~~, achieved a high position, maintained his status by freezing out anyone who might challenge ^{him} ~~it~~ and who ^{at last} ~~has now~~ descended to the depths of despair, trapped in a cell, unable to find a solution within himself and knowing not which way to turn.

^{Hitler's} ~~Two other career men~~ ^{diplomats whom he found ready to} ~~are found in the diplomatic~~ ^{do his bidding were} ~~field in the persons of~~ Neurath and von Papen.

The Baron Constantine von Neurath was born on the 2nd of February, 1873 near Wurtenburg and has been in the German Diplomatic Service ever since the completion of his ~~school~~ studies in 1901.

After being in various foreign ^{service} positions, he became Foreign Minister in 1932, holding this position until replaced by Ribbentrop in 1938. Although relieved of his active duties at that time, he continued to work for the Nazi Party until the end of the war. ^{On his talks with me he maintained} His whole attitude towards the Nazi Party at present is that he realized the danger they represented for Germany and stayed on merely to exercise a counter-influence against ~~their~~ ^{Nazi} revolutionary ideas. In studying his record ^{however, I could} find ~~very~~ little evidence of such counter-action and ^{I am of the opinion} ~~one~~ rather ~~gathers~~ that, in von Neurath, we have a well-integrated, intelligent, smooth personality type, who carried on his chosen profession, ~~merely~~ ^{own attitudes} shifting his ~~approach~~ as his superiors were shifted over him. He acted the part of a loyal German in trying to sell to foreign countries whatever government might be in power, and merely rationalized his actions towards the Third Reich by his plea that he was really working against them.

Neurath is a cultured, well-mannered, old gentleman, physically aged beyond his 72 years, who, for the sake of his profession and his desire to remain in the public eye, sacrificed most of his integrity and beliefs rather than jettison his life's training and start anew.

Franz von Papen, on the other hand, ^{was} presents a little different type of personality. He was born on the 29th of October, 1879 at Werl in Westphalia. He was originally in the cavalry and learned English during a trip to England where he studied ^(— as a gentleman —) the problems of hunting. He was on the general staff in 1910 and became military attache to the German Embassy in the United States in 1913. ^{Sabotage from Washington}

^{activities in directing espionage and in World} His ~~actions~~ during the ~~War~~ are well known and I shall not repeat ^{them here.} after the war he returned to his farm in Westphalia. ^{Out of sympathy and out of favor with the Weimar Republic, he re-entered political} He became Burgomeister eventually, being elected a ^{was} member of the Prussian Diet, and finally was asked ^{life at the bottom.}

by Hindenburg to form the new government and act in the capacity of chancellor in 1932. In this key position, he was able to watch the ^{masterly} ~~the~~ maneuver³ of ~~Schleicher~~ and Hitler and, in order to save his own neck, fell in with Hitler's demand for the chancellorship.

^{told me emphatically} He ~~states~~ that he was always ~~against~~ ^{strongly opposed to} Hitler at this time, ^{something I find easy to believe} a ~~reasonable~~ assumption since Hitler was actually taking away his job. Von Papen, however, is a much more canny individual than

Neurath and undoubtedly felt that this upstart party had the ^(potentialities) ~~promise~~ of power, and ^(He apparently) preferred to carry ^{on} ~~along~~ as a small frog in a big puddle than to wind up a dead frog in no puddle at all. He therefore ^{he threw} ~~fell~~ in with Hitler, explaining it in

aristocratic converts to

the manner customary to Nazis, ^{my} "only for the reason that someone should act as curb to Hitler's ambition."

~~He was~~ rewarded with the position of vice-chancellor, *von Papen*

~~He was~~ unable to control his ^{*(pre-~~h~~endant for)*} habit of nefarious negotiations, ~~however,~~ and was accused by Hitler of

plotting against him. He almost lost his life in

the June 30 purge ~~in~~ 1934, but got away with ~~only~~ *official*

~~by~~ dismissal. Although Hitler had apparently order-

ed his death and had now removed him from office,

von Papen still seemed to feel the need for "watch-

ing over the growth of this party", and so a few

weeks later he accepted Hitler's appointment to

Vienna. He ^{*(obviously)*} ~~apparently~~ did not do too good a job in

"checking ~~the~~ Nazi activities" in Vienna since while

he was there, Dolfuss was murdered ^{*German-led Nazism flourished*} and the ~~Viennese~~ *in Austria. Actually, as history records and as he admitted to me later,* situation came to a head. ~~He carried out his work~~ *he worked hard for the Nazis in an attempt to bring about Anschluss* in Vienna seeking for a peaceful ~~solution~~ *(for the next*

four years, at which time in 1938 he was recalled.

~~He~~ ^{*(frankly admitted to me his regret at this development)*} ~~regretted this considerably~~ for his entire four

years had been expended in perfecting a diplomatic

maneuver whereby Austria would be taken in the

Reich without bloodshed. Hitler, apparently impatient

after a four-year wait, substituted Seyss-Inquart

for Papen and accomplished ^{*(Anschluss)*} ~~the entire result~~ within

the next month. ^{*(he was very shocked at the ultimatum)*} ~~Papen regrets very much the~~

~~Anschluss but seems totally unable to differentiate~~

and armed might technique employed.

the end result of Hitler's work from what he himself ^{had been} had planned. Papen's idea was to take the country by deceit and ^{by} ~~by~~ ^{undercover work, but} ~~peacefully, whereas~~ ^{— simply —} Hitler's idea was to take it. ^(sincerely attempted to convince me that) simply at any cost. Papen feels his attempt represents ^{an effort to do good for all Germans — and thus the world.} a great contribution to the world and demonstrates ^{his} his constant desire to block Hitler's aggressive methods.

naively Papen ^{more success} achieved a ~~much~~ better result on his next job ^{in Turkey, where} when he was sent to Turkey to prevent the complete encirclement of Germany. "When war broke out ^(he said) against all my hopes and endeavors, I resolved to stay in Turkey — an intelligent decision. He remained in Turkey for the next five and a half years and states, "By my activity there I kept Turkey out of the war."

He ^{was} ~~is~~ extremely proud of this ^{record} activity because as he points ^{ad} out, "If Turkey had joined in with the Allies early ^(in the war) millions of Turks would have lost their lives. I personally have, therefore, saved their lives, and, while my activities in keeping Turkey ^e from an alliance with the other powers may not be considered favorable by the Allies, I consider it an act of humanity to have spared Turkey the devastation and death of open war."

As a matter of ^{system} fact, Papen actually ^{talked himself into} ~~has gotten~~ to believe ^{in his own rationalization, and he sincerely looked} this point of view and looks upon himself as a saviour of life, rather than as a member of a party whose primary aim seems to have ^{been quite the} pointed in the opposite direction.

Von Papen is of good intelligence, well-integrated and not at all emotional. *His calculated retirement and new start in politics was well thought out and* He represents an individual who, thwarted in his early development of a political career, retired to his farm and set about plans to begin a new campaign. His new approach was successful *though* and he had achieved the chancellorship *only in time to be swept aside by Hitler* when he was suddenly engulfed in the development of the Nazi Party. Instead of giving *not* up his ideas of political power, *but* he sought means to continue even though with lessened authority as a member of the Third Reich. He had no scruples, therefore, in joining himself with Hitler's party, all the while being neither loyal to his new friends nor to his old allies. He was almost caught in this double dealing by the purge but was able to convince Hitler of his abilities and given an ambassadorship. *Double dealing never won Papen the power he* His work has *apparently* not been spectacularly *craved, (it earned him)* successful, but *he has secured* a good living and a firm basis for fame within his own country, things which he values highly. He obviously has no basic integrity and is quite as willing to serve one master as the next, providing that he can get something out of it. His attitude is perfectly rational and his basic personality must be considered as entirely normal except for his complete *aside by the accepted code of honesty and loyalty,* inability to tell the truth, and the conquest of his integrity by his ambition. *either in word or act.*

got to know well - very jovial - brother up took home
very glad to see - adapted well to jail & poverty - only one
hesitant Sch not apologize for inability to offer cigar etc,
Had his wife & daughter on dinner - complete disregard
minor trials - deplored wood of toilets but struggled
off - concentrated on main effort - came from more to
less faster than anyone - Both Smig & Heine -
agree big man - great personality - capacity, status -
good evil, still big best wrong direction. Not
approval but objective.

Dressed in gray uniform, special for G - elegant cloth -

79 - last Eric - HQ staff granted not became cared about
his appearance but became pants would stay up without

86 - don't think just foot etc. Outstanding anywhere - slightly
coakely set out to be great in a ruthless, revolutionary party and.

88 + G verified by Rib. & Jod

101 - Frit - tall - ~~slender~~ angular - ~~slender~~?

106 - Sch - pipe - poetry - speaks good English - eager for
Engl books. friendly - pleasant - would talk - didn't
argue Nazi phil. thought N. Ph. not worth damn.

Family proud of it - of American - gave him at great length.

Put into question answers

112 - Rib - 60 ish - dandy now dirty, unkempt disheveled
in cell - in public haughty up nose - cage rat in
cell - 100 requests - Dr what shall I do? Sheaf of paper
in one hand - rumpling hair with other - what shall I
do - what do they think of me - no friends - what should
I do - four hours - Dr. what should I do - really - excellent
English.

again & again

- 116 - Smyth, that never been paid except expenses, not guilty
- 120 - Gos. really burnt - example of diplomacy
- 123 - Pitt - Margaret Blank - tall - attractive, highly
intell. secretarial sort of way - hard worker -
wanted to help R defense
- 132 - First saw R at Munderof - quite depressed -
disheveled - talking of suicide but never got up courage -
Munderof - worse - all different scraps of paper
"I always stood behind the Fuehrer" favorite quote.
135. Neurath - large, well-built gentleman
the old school type - 72 - glad to cooperate with
young physician -
- 137 - Time with Papen - always object to sell
Papen - Papen does sources of biog.
dip & conspirator as opposed to soldier - aristocratic
plus factor - what do they want with an old man like
me? - repeated - magnificent side of paper -
- 141 - Jodl - short - red nosed (veined) -
Mrs J. - tall - blond Nordic unattractive - spite
thru teeth - really wanted to help - even if she could
have saved him, she wouldn't have let her.

511 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK, NEW YORK

LOOK

either Germany or the world with

CHAPTER IV. THE ARMED SATELITES

be sure of
Hitler apparently knew from the beginning that he could not, ~~maintaining~~
~~To insure sure-fire results, Hitler needed more~~
than simple salesmanship. The front man with a
smooth tongue must be backed up by a hard visaged
individual with a gun ~~or axe~~. His method of using
the Gestapo for internal ~~sales~~ *persuasion* and the armed forces
as a foreign threat netted clear gain until ~~the sales~~ *he overreached himself*
by invading Poland on Sept. 1, 1939.
~~resistance of the English stiffened decisively. The~~
~~leaders of these forces were true satellites reflecting~~
~~only Hitler's ideas and plans.~~

Of the two army leader, Alfred Jodl, the more
reserved, is by far the most interesting. Although
born at Wurtzburg in Western Germany on the 10th of
May, 1890, his family actually comes from Bavaria.
His father ^{was} descended from an old Bavarian family in
Munich. *(One day, in an expansive mood)* *(told me:)* Jodl states, "You can still find the family
name there. It means 'steer'." *(Jodl)* He attended school
in Bavaria. His family was of the military tradition
and his first marriage was to a daughter of a retired
colonel of French descent who had immigrated from
France during the French Revolution. Jodl served
with the artillery and general staff during the First
World War and in 1914 was wounded in the right leg
but recovered without ill effect.

Jodl's career followed ~~along~~ the usual promo-
tional steps until in the present war he became

This second marriage seemed to have been a true love match. When I asked about his second marriage following so close after the funeral of his first wife, his severe face softened and flushed. Then he said shortly: "In March, 1944, the future looked very dark. We married then

attached personally to Hitler, serving as Chief under Keitel with the rank of Colonel General.

~~During the war~~ ^{just} Jodl's wife died of pneumonia in ~~1943~~ ¹⁹⁴⁴ and ~~he soon~~ ^{he} remarried in March, 1944. ~~Jodl's present~~ ^{his second}

a tall, blond, unattractive woman — wife, the former Louise von Bender, had been a close friend of the family since 1934 and had taken care of ~~Jodl's wife~~ ^{the first Frau} during her illness. They realized that the future of Germany was very black and consequently married soon after the death of Jodl's wife (in order to have at least a short time together.)

The ~~present~~ ^{second} Mrs. Jodl is a most energetic personality and ~~has been~~ ^{was} extremely active in her husband's defense. She was ^{in fact, eager} very anxious to testify in his behalf. ~~The reason for her testimony was that she did not~~ ^{grates an interesting} ~~German women do not appear in public~~.

Jodl's whole attitude ~~was~~ ^{was} one of cold indifference to the defeat, coupled with eager activity in the preparation of his defense. He was the most difficult ~~individual to talk with since he had developed an outer shell of~~ ^{of all the prisoners} formal reserve which would have done credit to the coldest Prussian officer. For days our interviews consisted of the exchange of a few brief words, mostly monosyllabic responses to questions during which time he stood at formal attention, clicking his heels when anyone entered the cell. Eventually,

sidelight on the character of this exceedingly "proper" German officer. When his wife's request that his lawyer call her as a defense witness to testify to his character and innocence even of knowledge of atrocities, I could see that he was ~~not~~ emotionally moved. But only for a fraction of a second. His answer was snapped out with obvious sincerity, "No. Of course not, German women do not appear in public."

Had he known that his wife's appearance on the witness stand would have saved his life, I am sure the "~~kindly, kind, and polite~~" reaction of the traditional German male would have been the same.

~~we had a number of relatively~~
however, he relaxed and friendly discussions, could
~~be carried out.~~ He was extremely shocked by the
indictment but emphasized that as a soldier he had
merely obeyed orders. He ~~felt it impossible to~~ ^{swore he could not}
understand the atrocities, and ~~thought~~ ^{maintained} that they
must have been carried out by beasts and not real
Germans.

~~Jodl apparently overlooked~~ ^(of course, chose to) the fact that he,
himself, had been in a position to influence Hitler
had he so desired. ~~Jodl, however, is extremely~~ ^{he was an inordinately}
ambitious ^(man) ~~and undoubtedly would never have done any-~~ ^{he seemed} ^{to}
thing to compromise himself with the Nazi Party.
His shy, retiring personality make-up and his ability
of coordination, together with ~~his~~ ^{the} extremely ~~good~~ ^{high}
intelligence, were ^{the} qualities which ~~must have~~ made
him highly acceptable to Hitler.

Wilhelm Keitel, on the other hand is a typical
Prussian General. Born on the 22nd of September,
1882 in North Germany, he ~~received~~ ^{was} education from
private tutors, since his family was ~~extremely well-~~ ^{ed by}
~~to-do.~~ ^(was wealthy, the scion of) His father descends from an old Hanovarian
agricultural family, ~~and his~~ ^{Keitel's} ancestors have been Prussian
military ~~and~~ ^{and} agricultural leaders for ~~over~~ ^{more than}
100 years in the Hanovarian area.

Keitel married in 1904 and ~~had~~ ^{had} five children.

honor, and is the type who would prefer to suicide to hanging.

One daughter died ~~in Switzerland~~ of tuberculosis and ~~another~~ son was killed on the Russian front. The whereabouts of his other sons ~~at the present time~~ ^{he did not know} are unknown. ~~Keitel~~ ^{was} is a very typical Prussian gentleman, highly intelligent, ~~who is~~ ^{he was} much more emotional than Jodl and consequently ~~much more~~ ^{talked} ~~easy to talk~~ ^{readily} with. He ~~is~~ ^{professed to be} extremely concerned over the fate of the German people ~~and feels that~~ ^{but maintained} as leader of the German army, he ~~is~~ ^{of course was} responsible only for the military activity of the Reich. ~~His development~~ ^{such a} ~~in the German~~ ^{advancement} army ~~was slow during the first War, in which he~~ ^{had been relatively} served on the general staff ~~and in other capacities.~~ ^{though}

He ~~was eventually appointed General Field Marshall~~ ^d and has actually been the leader of the German Military ^{however, since} after Hitler's dismissal in 1938 of von Blomberg and von Fritsch. He ~~is~~ ^{was} particularly concerned about the honor of the German ~~army~~ ^{he} leaders, and ~~feels~~ ^{constituted} that the atrocities and crimes ascribed to them ~~are a blot which never can be removed.~~ ^{He became profoundly emotional when discussing his German}

Keitel was undoubtedly an ideal assistant to Hitler since ~~he has the fundamental viewpoint that~~ ^{his conditioning to unquestioned obedience was absolute.} ~~there is no such thing as objecting to an order~~ ^{For him there was} of the commander-in-chief. ~~He states, "We can only~~ ^{When I asked him how officers and gentlemen could have carried out the outrageous orders of} receive orders and obey. It is hard for Americans to understand the Prussian code of discipline". ^{He has, he said,}

again and again

Keitl was always cooperative in his interviews and was particularly impressed with ^{the} psychological tests. ^{not administered} He felt the American techniques were much better than the silly nonsense of the German army psychologists, probably "because they even flunked my son on an officer's candidate test because of some stupid business in a dark room and an exercise for voice, saying that his voice was not loud enough for an audience when it was not there." Coincidentally, after this event, Keitl discontinued psychological activities in the Wehrmacht.

Keitl was extremely enthusiastic about Hitler's ability as a military commander and ^{declared} states that he was easily a military genius. ^{in matters of} When it comes to strategy, he ^{fact} feels Hitler was smarter than either Goering or Ribbentrop, and Keitl ^{admitted also} indicates that Hitler was much more intelligent than either Jodl or himself. Keitl ^{not attributed} feels desperately about the disgrace of the Wehrmacht, ^{to it} particularly their connection with SS activities. He maintains ^{ed} that had he known of the atrocities, he would have left the party but ^{he said, had} that Hitler, limited his knowledge ~~to~~ simply to military planning.

Keitl ^{regarded} emphasized Hitler's technique of bringing in secretaries at every discussion, ^{as} a maneuver which ~~he states~~ completely eliminated free ~~statement~~. ^{expression of}

opinion. His contention was, in effect, that had there been no stenographic record of his dissent, he would have disagreed with Hitler; but what this amounted to was an admission that he thought too highly of his own skin - and of his position - to risk

going on record as opposed to the Führer.

Katib was always cooperative in his interviews and was particularly impressed with psychological tests. He felt the American techniques were much better than the ally knowledge of the German army psychologists, probably because they even flunked my son on an officer's candidate test. Katib was in a dark room and an exercise for voice saying that his voice was not loud enough for an audience when it was not there. Katib distinguished psychological activities in the movement. Katib was extremely enthusiastic about Hitler's ability as a military commander and stated that he was really a military genius. When it comes to strategy, he feels Hitler was smarter than either Goering or Ribbentrop, and Katib believes that Hitler was much more intelligent than either Jodel or Himmler. Katib feels that the disarray of the movement, particularly their connection with SS activities, he maintains that he had known of the activities, he would have felt the party was Hitler. Katib admitted his knowledge is simply to military planning. Katib suggested Hitler's technique of bringing in secretaries at every discussion, a maneuver which completely eliminated free discussion.

Actually, ^{was} Keitel is as intelligent as Jodl but ^{he} lacks ^{it} the latter's ability at planning. In the overall set-up it would appear that Keitel was the front man and the pacifier ^{of} ~~to~~ Hitler, while Jodl did the real work. Keitel becomes profoundly emotional when discussing his German honor and is the type who would prefer to suicide than to hang as a criminal. Both army officers ^{were} ~~are~~ meticulously neat and keep ^{it} their cells in perfect condition. They ^{were} ~~are~~ the only ones who complain ^{and} that they do not have the necessary cleaning materials to ^{keep their quarters in a state of} ~~accomplish this~~ task to ~~total~~ perfection, and they both ^{high} ~~reflect~~ the long-continued training of the Prussian military system.

Of the Naval group Karl Doenitz is easily the most outstanding. He was born on September 16, 1891 and throughout his life was associated with the North Seas area. ^{He} ~~He~~ joined the Navy in 1910 and during World War I was captured by the British. During this period he feigned insanity but states that he was only a youngster and was quite unsuccessful at it. He and two companions attempted to imitate crazy people but Doenitz says that the British doctors were much too smart and solitary confinement cubed them in no time.

^{Doenitz}
He was repatriated in 1919, and continued on in the Navy becoming eventually the Commander of the destroyer, flotilla. He became Commander of a cruiser and finally became the Supreme Officer in charge of the U-boat, flotilla. As commander of the U-boats, he ~~has~~ spent most of his time at sea and apparently had little to do with German politics. He was called in 1943 by Hitler ^{to} and succeeded ~~as~~ ^{to} Reader as Commander-in-Chief of the German Navy.

~~Doenitz is a~~ highly intelligent, well-informed, ^{one} ~~Doenitz was also a~~ friendly type of personality, and he possesses an excellent sense of humor. He is ^(consistently denied) quite discouraged ^{ing} ~~about being arrested~~ as a war criminal, since he ^{condemning that} maintains he only acted as a naval officer, and that his Nazi affiliations were ^{slight} extremely weak. There is little doubt, however, that he was a great admirer of Hitler. ^{There is equally little doubt that he was honestly} and he has been repeatedly shocked by the revelations of the brutality of Hitler's ^{employed} power. ^{Apparently Hitler} In dealing with ^(simple, direct) men like Doenitz, who were simple and direct in their action, Hitler ^{d again} demonstrates his great ability in handling people. ^{With Doenitz he apparently} His relations ^{was bluff, straightforward, concerned only with naval affairs.} with Doenitz were equally simple and direct and ^{mightily} ^{brilliance as an organizer, his} apparently Doenitz was impressed by Hitler's superior memory and knowledge of naval affairs. Doenitz ~~claims that Hitler was a brilliant organizer and that his actions were always straight-forward and honest.~~

(It would seem that)

Apparently Hitler, realizing that Doenitz was essentially an honest sea-faring type, did not ~~in-volve~~ *involve* him in ~~doctrinate him into~~ the duplicity and scheming which marked his relations with other ^{subordinates} ~~members of the~~ Nazi Party. (In return, although not a member of the Party, Doenitz was a fanatical developer of Nazi ideals in the German Navy.

A part of ^{this} ~~his~~ firm admiration for Hitler ~~is~~ ^{is} probably attributable to the fact that through Hitler the navy, Doenitz's true love, was rebuilt and again became a world power. ^{No doubt Hitler recognized this, and} ~~Doenitz was~~ always extremely loyal to Hitler and for this reason the Fuehrer ^{(came) (led on)} ~~felt that~~ Doenitz ^{to} ~~would~~ take his side *when he* ^{ad} ~~in the~~ quarrel with Raeder. This argument had ^(over the value of) ~~developed because of Hitler's opinion that~~ capital ships, ^{which Hitler considered obsolete} ~~were of no value and that the entire navy~~ program should stress submarine development. Consequently, Doenitz was called in to replace Raeder, ^{he} ~~and~~ confounded Hitler by maintaining Raeder's point as to the value of ~~the~~ large battle ships.

Doenitz had little opportunity in the few years ~~during which~~ he was naval commander to encounter Hitler frequently and ^(he apparently was sincere in) ~~lived~~ on his simple belief that Hitler was a kind and ^{honest} ~~straightforward~~ gentleman. ^{His} ~~With the conclusion of the war,~~ Doenitz was appointed as Hitler's successor and he maintains

~~this was a complete surprise to him. He feels that~~
~~as due to the fact that~~
~~he was thus honored primarily because all other~~
successors were either dead or in disgrace and that
he was the only honest man left in Germany. This
concept appears to be partly true at any rate, since
there is little doubt that Doenitz was the only
military leader for whom the Luftwaff, the Wehrmacht,
and Navy had any respect. ^{As} Doenitz put it, "After
all, I was the only leader left alive who was not
under arrest or under orders of death. Of course
the Army leaders were still active but neither
the Navy nor the Luftwaff would pay any attention
to them. Consequently, I was picked simply because
it was felt I could most easily bring about peace.
This I did as fast as possible, and now as Hitler's
successor the Americans want to hang me. This seems
to be an example of Yankee humor."

Doenitz ~~had~~ gotten along quite well in the
Nuremberg Jail by his use of ~~this theory of dis-~~
^{such wry}
~~torted humor. Everything that happened to him from~~
^{the seatless toilet, R-rations, even an occasional}
~~failure to sleep to a shifting in the rations is~~
^{had night's}
^{was twisted into}
~~chalked up as~~ some sort of a joke. He was not in
such a humorous mood, however, following the demon-
stration of the Nazi atrocities and seemed particu-
larly amazed that such murders could have been per-
petrated. ^(at the start he had been)
~~He, at first, was quite convinced that~~

the trial would not result in a conviction, but as it has progressed he is ~~beginning to lose~~ hope.

Most interesting ^{to me was the} ~~is his~~ change in attitude towards his erst-while hero, Adolf Hitler. ^{In one of my last talks with him, he made} He ~~states~~, "All

I can say is that ^{Hitler} ~~he~~ must have had two sides to ^{this cynical comment:} his character and he was clever enough to conceal the other side from decent people."

^{Doenitz took prison life well, employing much of his time to} During his stay in prison, Doenitz has ~~improved~~

his knowledge of ~~the~~ English language by reading books and poetry in English. He ^{was} ~~is~~ of keen intelligence, ~~being~~ definitely above average, and in addition, has ^d excellent constructive, imaginative, and

creative ability. He ^(felt toward the end) ~~feels~~ that the German people were led to destruction by Hitler and ^(for a long time hoped) ~~says~~ that he ^{would be spared to} can play some part in their re-development. ~~He is~~

^{and much smarter} ~~such~~ more of a gentleman than most of the prisoners, ^{he} and relied upon his intelligence and speaking ability

to meet a situation rather than upon cold formality as ^{did} ~~do~~ the other military men. ^{It is my opinion that Hitler} There is little doubt ^(his) that the Nazi Party used good judgment in selecting him as the successor to Hitler

as he is undoubtedly a leader of great stature and was a ~~most~~ competent man ^(to meet an) for the extremely complicated situation. ^(felt) Doenitz feels, however, that his

^{in prison, naturally,} appointment was a dubious compliment and ^{he was bitter in pointing out} ~~emphasized~~ the fact that his seven days of ^{Führership} ~~total leadership over~~

a ruined nation have netted him nothing except an

He would not have been brought to trial was quite obviously false. As commander-in-chief of the Navy, he would almost certainly have had a chair in the dock, as did his predecessor Erich Raeder. Raeder

opportunity to hang with the other German criminals - a situation not humorous even to Doenitz.

[Doenitz's assumption that, except for the accident of his succession to Hitler

Doenitz's predecessor, Erich Raeder, was born on the 24th of April, 1876, near Hamb^{urg} and is a ^{His home life was Spartan and} much more typical German type. He did not have the ^{unhappy. He} benefit of a happy home as did Doenitz and developed ^{early decided to} with primitive living conditions and in a harsh environment. He studied ^{for} for a military doctor's degree, but ^{he abandoned this ambition and} had always been interested in naval affairs and in 1894 ^{naval} enlisted as a cadet.

Raeder prides ^d himself on his physical and intellectual ruggedness ^{which he attributes to his early training,} and states that during his ^{says,} early training "I noticed the ^(development) approach of an inner

firmness and I became hard even against myself." ^{As a junior naval officer, Raeder} ^{first} edited several naval papers and, during the World War, acted as commander of a light cruiser. He also held the position during this time of Chief of Staff of the Reconnaissance Forces. In 1928 he became ^a full admiral and commander-in-chief of the navy in 1935.

Raeder had little early connection with the ^(but, when Hitler came into power, they soon) Nazi Party, but became friendly with Hitler and ^{Raeder} sold ^{him} on the idea of a strong naval organization, particularly the pocket battle ship. [Personally, Raeder ^{was} a quiet, little man, cold and hard with

very little to say. Intellectually he ^{was merely a} good average, not even
but ~~does not begin to~~ ^{ing} approach Doenitz in brilliancy.
He ~~is somewhat~~ ^{was} fussy in nature and ~~maintains an aloof~~, maintaining
a wall of formal coldness ^{against any conversational overtures of an intimate nature,}. He ~~is willing, however, to~~
~~discuss any questions,~~ ^{answered direct} ~~asked, and~~ Neither of the naval ^{though he was}
officers represent the classical Prussian pattern ^{willingly}
demonstrated by the leaders of the army. Both Doenitz
and Raeder ~~are~~ ^{were} typical naval leaders, skillful in
their own techniques and embroiled in politics ^{primarily} ~~merely~~
as a method of developing their own branch of service.
Raeder ^{however,} was much more intimate with Hitler than
was Doenitz, ^{I have no} ~~and there is little~~ doubt but that Raeder ^{deliberately}
entered the political field ~~with deliberate intention~~
~~—and himself as well—~~
to build up the navy ~~as well as himself,~~ whereas
Doenitz actually was a more firm believer in ~~the~~
Nazi principles. Raeder ^{was} ~~is~~ a scheming ^{or who planned to use Hitler,} political
Doenitz was a disciple who ~~wanted only to serve Hitler and the Navy.~~
~~type as opposed to Doenitz, who is a more simple~~
~~and direct disciple of Hitler.~~

Describe

Ernst Kaltenbrunner acted as successor to ~~Goebbels~~
Heidrich as Hitler's hatchet man. (He was born on
the 4th of October, 1903, in upper Austria. He
attended law school and is one of the few members
of the major Nazi group who was not in the first
World War, ^{being barely 15 at the time of the armistice.} During this period he was engaged as
~~a student.~~ He did odd jobs ^{and studied without much direction} during his scholastic

Thereafter as a relatively impoverished student he

These you have the behavior pattern of a timid man. ^{a great} ~~The great~~ hulking, tough looking murderer ^{who} ~~Kaltenbrunner~~ was at heart a ^{leader} ~~shivering~~ coward. This is the heartless Gestapo ^{chief} who succeeded ~~the~~ "Hangman" ^{Heidrich.}

^{taking} ~~for~~ years, and finally took up law at the request of his ^{received his degree as} father. He became a Doctor of Jurisprudence in 1926.

^{Kaltenbrunner the lawyer was} a lost ~~and frustrated~~ ^{His legal work is not outstanding and in 1928, still apparently} ~~soul of the "lost generation," he entered~~ he became interested in politics, and eventually was ^{Here his frustrations showed him well, and} appointed as a secretary ⁱⁿ of the Austrian Government.

^{Though} He had been interested in the illegal Austrian Nazi Party, ^{he did} but ~~had not~~ ^{when Hitler took over Germany.} joined until 1933. ^{Not until} In 1939, ^{when the party} it was legalized, and he became ^{openly a} an out-and-out Nazi ~~in Austria~~.

He felt that through his work he could promote better relationships between Austria and the Reich and re-establish Vienna as the focal point of the old Austrian dynasty. Eventually, he succeeded Heidrich and became head of the Nazi Gestapo.

^{to} ^{into} ^{this} ^{section} ← Kaltensbrunner is a huge individual, being well over six feet in height, with large bones and gross features. He is quite intelligent and for the most part masks his feelings behind a frozen visage. ^{But as simply and fleetly as words can say it, Kalten} ^{brunner was} He is a typical bully, ~~however~~, tough and arrogant ^(a cheap craven in defeat) when in power, and obviously unable to stand the pressure of prison life.

^{Shortly before his trial began,} ⁱⁿ Towards the end of October and early November, 1945, ^{Kaltenbrunner (Almost every time I visited him in his cell, he broke} ~~while in prison, he became extremely depressed and~~ ^{down and)} He was frightened and wanted to be comforted. He was sure ~~(cried, easily and was profoundly concerned about the~~

~~fact that he would probably not receive a fair trial. It was a~~ ^{All the toughness had melted away.} ~~All of the hardness of character which marked him as an~~ ^{had been} executioner's career ~~melted away and was replaced~~

^{true} ~~for~~ ^{the} ~~case~~ of the very baby who is convinced that "everybody picks on me"

by ~~the~~ ^{this} soft, sobbing personality who eagerly sought reassurance as to his future.

On the 17th of November, Kaltenbrunner developed a spontaneous subarachoid hemorrhage. This condition results from the rupture of a tiny blood vessel located in the membranes covering the brain. It does not result in a stroke or paralysis such as occurs when the bleeding is directly into the brain substance. ^(a subarachoid hemorrhage) ~~because in this case~~ the bleeding is into the spinal canal and the fluid areas surrounding the brain.

Such illnesses may be fatal but in Kaltenbrunner's case he suffered only severe headaches and inability to get about. He was hospitalized for a considerable period and eventually returned to the trial. After several days, however, he had a secondary hemorrhage which required further hospitalization. These hemorrhages are spontaneous and cannot be predicted or prevented. It is possible, however, ^{fear of standing trial, his} that his ^{increased} tension and agitation, causing blood pressure rises, were ^{partially} ~~directly~~ responsible.

^{In court} Kaltenbrunner has since returned to face trial and has maintained ^{what was for him a good,} his unemotional front, while in ^{Psychologically, he} court. He represents the classical ^{is a fairly simple} example of the bully personality, an individual who can be very ^{cool-} harsh and ruthless when in command but who ^{is soft for mercy} is willing to cry for clemency when the situation is reversed.

There are two other top Nazis who should be considered in this chapter, since their major function ^{also} was to protect Hitler ^{with} through force. Unfortunately, ^{from our} point of view, ^{one} of these men, Himmler, is dead and the other, Bormann, is ^{believed dead} ~~presumed so~~. ^{Himmler}, of course, functioned chiefly as Gestapo head but towards the end of the war took over more and more of the advisory powers of Goering. Bormann, who succeeded Hess, acted partially as deputy and partially as a block to keep unpleasant contacts from the Fuehrer. Interestingly enough, both of these men were ^{so} quiet and retiring ~~in~~ ^{that} their relationships, and it is almost impossible to gain information about them from the other Nazis.

Heinrich Himmler, who had been a school teacher with ambitions for tremendous personal power, was undoubtedly a most interesting personality. He joined the Party primarily in an endeavor to develop his own strength, and this ambition is ^{evident in} ~~seen throughout~~ all of his activity. ^{intellectually} Himmler was a typical ~~intellectual~~ dilettante who knew a little bit about a great deal. He fancied himself as an expert in race problems, and it was ^{he who} ~~as a result of this idea that he developed the~~ theory of the transplantation of entire communities. He did a bit of digging in some of the old German mounds, unearthing occasional arrowheads, and Schirach ~~tells us~~ that he carried these souvenirs with him,

showing them at every opportunity, and emphasizing his skill as an archeologist. He apparently believed in the racial doctrines of Rosenberg to ^{so firmly} such an extent that ^{he} his various regulations were carried to extremes. In the SS, for example, Himmler ordered that no ~~individual~~ ^{man} could become a full-fledged member of the SS unless ^{he could prove} his family had been proven pure Aryan as far back as 1800. This was not enough for the officers, however, who had to prove their Aryan blood back to 1750. ~~It would require no scholarly monographs to establish that~~ ^{It} must have been extremely unfortunate for an individual ~~Himmler knew next to nothing about the problems of mass~~ ^{Himmler knew next to nothing about the problems of mass} aspiring to officership to have had some blood contamination, archeology or genetics. ~~What he did know — and well —~~ ^{was how to obtain, hold and abuse power.} Such ideas are obviously fallacious and stupid and yet these are the methods that Himmler used throughout all of Germany. ^{Emotionally,} ^{that was not all.}

^{Emotionally,} Personally, Himmler seems to have been a withdrawn sort of individual, who ^{kept up a} lived an unpretentious life, but ^{for Himmler's private life} who represented the ultimate in ^{duplicity.} two-faced behaviour. ^{Even in his marital} he was not merely two-faced. Schinack, Kallenbrunn and others accused ^{me that this mousey, meagrehearted man maintained perhaps as many as 20000} His marital relationships including the maintenance of several separate homes with his wife and ^{a wife and} mistresses ^{in homes suitable to their station.} typical of this behaviour. He was an individual who in official intercourse with other Hitler henchmen, he at one moment was a placid, appearing, mouse-like person, ^{Among his subordinates, to the prisoners in his power, he} and the next moment was an arrogant, sadistic, heartless vicious killer. His success in hiding this phase of his personality, ^{Even his co-defendants at the Nuremberg were} has been amply demonstrated in the amazement of the present defendants who seem dumb-founded beyond question.

This vicious reputation, brought to America by refugees from his "justice" apparently had not caught up with Himmler at home. In Germany he was almost unbelievably successful

Himmler's co-defendants were ^{sound} ~~unaware~~ ^{practicing} of ~~Himmler's~~ ^{his} atrocities or innocent of their own. I am simply stating that, as a psychiatrist and a practicing psychologist, employing observational techniques ~~which are medically sound~~, I established beyond medical doubt that ~~Himmler's co-defendants~~ ^{the other Nazis} were surprised by the ~~extent~~ ^{as the end near} ruthlessness, the sadism, ~~the extent~~ ^{the} and the fiendishness that prosecution testimony attributed to Himmler.

by the extent of his atrocities and crimes against humanity. Please do not misunderstand me. I am not saying that

Martin Bormann, on the other hand, is an individual whose personality seems far more clear-cut. He was an early member of the Nazi Party and succeeded Hess following the latter's flight to England. He seems to have been a tremendous worker and quite willing to carry the load of detail which Hitler delegated to his deputy. His personality is essentially that of a work-horse type, and yet he must have had tremendous ambition, for we find that ^{as him} ~~he~~ and Himmler and Goebbels had ^{as the end near} ~~eventually taken over~~ almost the entire control of the Party. This apparently had always been Himmler's ambition ~~and we know that he and Ribbentrop and Goering were always at odds.~~

Heller
Heiter
Working through Bormann, Himmler ^{apparently poisoned Hitler's mind against Goering and} ~~was able to~~ slander Ribbentrop and Goering constantly, and we find him very successful, for as the end of Germany approached, we find Himmler, Goebbels, and Bormann practically running the country. Bormann, however, must have been obviously working primarily for himself, for at the very end we find him replacing Himmler in Hitler's affections, and in Hitler's will only Bormann and Goebbels were left in positions of control.

Ribbentrop — the two who, with Goebbels, ~~might~~ ^{would} have won Hitler's mantle from him. This campaign of slander obviously succeeded until the very last days. But

CHAPTER V. THE RABBLE ROUSERS

Two of Hitler's staunchest adherents were best known for their abilities to stir up the masses of Germany by appealing to their emotions rather than their minds. Although their talents were primarily vocal, Hitler rewarded their loyalty with high positions far beyond their abilities. In spite of their exalted positions, *however, they remained rabble rousers to the end, ever ready to mount* rank, they could be depended upon to descend to soap boxes whenever Hitler ^{he} required a kindling of mob spirit ^{to} to carry out his plans.

They were Julius Streicher is one of the two Nazis, Robert Ley, ^{and} is the other, who in spite of the defeat, of the ~~imprisonment, and the reaction~~ war, the fact that they are in prison, and the reaction of humanity to their crimes, *and even the scorn of their jailmates, they remained what they had been to the* still totally persist in their peculiar beliefs and enthusiasms. *Last.*

Streicher is a short, stocky, fiery individual, born in 1885 in Bavaria. His family were ~~essentially~~ *mostly* school teachers and he followed this career, becoming an elementary teacher in Nuremberg. ~~He was an officer~~ *he served as an officer* in the first war and, on his return, formed an organization of other officers whose primary attitudes were *when I asked him how our service had inspired his anti-Semitism he assured me* anti-Semitic. ~~He states,~~ *however,* that even before *had* the World War he ^{had} participated as a speaker in a Democratic Youth organization which had frequent dealings with young Jewish lawyers. At that time he had been told that he must be "very careful, because

the Jews have great power and will be dangerous to us".

"~~He admits that he did not quite understand this~~
~~remark at the time,~~ ^{"he said,"} but after the World War ~~he~~ ^{I saw} noted that the Jews ^{were} everywhere in Germany, especially in Marxian parties and that they had started their international instigational speeches. He says, "I saw how ~~they~~ ^{Jews} suddenly appeared as important members of the Government and its agencies. I witnessed how they ~~had~~ ^{praised} treason as heroism in their controlled press, and how they pictured a mockery of Christ. They demanded in public discussions even such things as the abolishing of the law which called for punishment for abortion. After having seen and experienced all this and even more, I, the German, realized the danger and the constant threat of the Jews and I joined the movement of those men that had recognized the Jewish danger and began to fight it."

From this point on we find Streicher ^{'s} becoming more and more violently ^{anti-Semitic} ^{and} with a fervor that can only be described as fanatic. His ^{medically it} belief represents a true paranoid reaction, ⁱⁿ that ~~he~~ ^{Streicher} had a systematized series of beliefs which superficially seemed logical, but which ^{were} ~~are~~ founded purely on his own emotional ^{feelings} and prejudices and not upon any known facts. ^{this system} He ~~has~~ ^{had} elaborated this system and ~~has~~ continued ^{for} so long that he actually believed ^d it.

^{my} In talking ^{3 with} Streicher it is impossible to carry on a conversation for more than a few minutes without ^{into} becoming involved in a discussion of the "Jewish problem."

^{He worries about "the Jewish Conspiracy"} It is with him constantly, twenty-four hours a day,

and his every thought, his every action, bears some reference to his beliefs.

In other matters he ^{was} essentially rational, although his intelligence ^{was} is only low-average. He ^{is} was an indifferent water colorist, ^{possibly a good} and an ardent farmer.

His speech ^{was} is blunt, tactless, and at times uncouth.

His ^{body was} physical build is rugged and he ^{took} takes great pride in ^{his} the strength of his body. ^{and sexual vigor} Apparently he carries

this pride into his belief in his sexual prowess for he willingly admits ^{had been} that he is a famous fornicator and even at the age of sixty-one ^{he contended} states that the only true

test of his physical health would be to make a woman ^{Of unclean mind} available to him. He is somewhat Spartan in his

^{care of his body} appearance and ^{is} very tidy about his cell.

To the amazement of the American soldier guards, he ^{got} gets up ^{regularly} every morning at 6 a.m., ^{went} and goes through a rigorous period of ^{rigorous} calisthenics; he then douses himself with

a bucket of cold water even in the middle of the winter. ^{though} He devotes his ^{time} day to reading and writing, ^{the}

The only books in which he has interest, ^{however}, were are those which deal with the Jewish problem or which give him material for discussion. As a matter of fact,

anything by or about a Jew or Jews,
anything available, from his point of view, is evidence
against ~~them~~. *For months before and during the trial he was*
analysis of the Bible, *determined* to demonstrate *that even* how in their own
writings the Jewish people have condemned themselves.

L. G. Quatrin *Streicher* about his notorious collection of pornography, *He seemed not at all abashed*
He maintains that he collected his entire library
of pornography, which was one of the most famous col-
lections of pornography in the world, from Jewish
sources, *He blandly explained "I* and states that he studied it only to demon-
strate the type of literature that these people read."

Apparently, he indulged in this type of research *to most*
the uttermost and was diligent in his studies for he
seems to know each book by heart, and the enthusiasm
with which he describes these volumes *leads (ed me)* leaves one to
suspect more than mere interest in the fact that they
were *allegedly* stolen from the Jewish people.

And many of his books — though not necessarily those
Interestingly enough, this habit he had of con-
fiscating every Jewish library led to the formation of
the Jewish section to Der Sturmer library. Streicher
felt that in order to publish his tirades against the
Jews he had to understand their theories and beliefs,
and consequently whenever a synagogue was desecrated
or a Rabbi thrown *out of his home,* Streicher had brought
to him all the *salvaged books and papers* available literature. From these he
selected the rarest manuscripts and the finest volumes,
and compiled a magnificent collection of Jewish works.

to be known as a collector of graphic obscenity, but maintained

confessed to be a collector of graphic obscenity

anything available from his point of view as evidence

against the Jews and he is certainly engaged in an

analysis of the Bible to demonstrate how in their own

writings the Jewish people have condemned themselves.

He maintains that he collected his entire library

of pornography, which was one of the most famous col-

lections of pornography in the world from Jewish

sources and states that he studied it only to demon-

strate the type of literature that these people read.

Apparently, he indulged in this type of research in

the past and has different motives for he

seems to know each book by heart and the enthusiasm

with which he described these volumes was unusual to

suggest more than mere interest in the fact that they

were stolen from the Jewish people.

Interestingly enough, this man had a lot of

material in his library and he was very

the Jewish section to his library.

told that in order to avoid his library against the

Jews he had to make sure that the library and books

and consequently whenever a synagogue was destroyed

or a Rabbi thrown into the street, Gerschel had brought

to him all the valuable documents. From these he

collected the rarest manuscripts and the finest volumes

and compiled a magnificent collection of Jewish works.

the destruction of great quantities of Jewish literature,

Ironically, though Streicher was largely responsible for
Through his efforts practically all other Jewish
literature has been destroyed, but when Nuremberg fell,
his the entire Sturmer collection was preserved intact.
Thus through a queer quirk of fate, Julius Streicher
who revelled in the title of Jew Baiter No. One has
preserved for posterity *a large share* of the worthwhile works,
writings, and literature of the German Jews.

In his public life as Gauleiter of Franconia,
Streicher was apparently an aggressive tyrant. He led
a very *loose* life, apparently even more than could be
condoned by the *sexually loose* Nazi Party. *Whether the Party was influenced only by* Perhaps
his reputation for drinking or that plus the notorious it was his basic animal nature or perhaps it was the
influence of his pornographic library, *but his sexual*
life became notorious and Streicher was eventually
tried by *him* the Party in 1939 and banished to his farm
at Pleikershof, near Nuremberg. His first wife had
died and he went into retirement with his thirty-five
year old secretary, whom he married four years later
just before the end of the present war. *Streicher's* ~~His~~ life on
the farm is typical of his personality. He built an
extremely expensive series of three barns, formed in
a "U", stocked *them* with the finest cattle and pigs *and* for
himself, *however*, *built* he needed only a small *apartment* set of rooms
on the second floor, ~~built~~ directly over the pig-pen.
Apparently Streicher's *my* compatriots sensed the *gross*
crudeness of his moral fibre, *and* for when he was brought
in *to* a prisoner to the American prison at Luxembourg,

they refused to eat with him. A formal delegation, headed by Doenitz, requested that at least they be treated as gentlemen and not be forced to eat at the same table with Julius Streicher. ^{The request was rejected, The} Needless to say, ^{ing} the American authorities pointed out that they were all in the same boat and ~~they~~ ^{would} all have to mess together. Streicher's former associates, however, maintained their aloofness, and the only person who would talk to him at all during this period of imprisonment was his bosom companion, the deteriorated Robert Ley. Streicher, ^{for his part, felt} ~~on the other hand, feels~~ that the other members of the group are below him. He believes ^d that they have ^d guilty consciences, whereas ^{had done nothing to be ashamed of, was in fact an admirable} he ~~simply represents an individual who attempted to~~ rebuild Germany.

^{Intellectually} ~~His theories~~ ^{Streicher} are childish, in the extreme. He gained his ends by violent tirades ~~which appeared in~~ ^{the} ~~the~~ ^{Day} ~~the~~ ^{Sturmer} and by long harangue ^{ing} speeches. It was during the course of one of these speeches that he first ^{greatly - not because of what he said, but how long he took to say it. It seems} met Hitler who impressed him primarily because Hitler ^{that Hitler was the only person Streicher ever met who could} could harangue ~~and talk~~ longer than he, ^{That truly was} which ~~is~~ ^{as} something, considering that Streicher's ~~average~~ ^{speech} ~~used~~ ^(and sometimes up to) to last two ~~or~~ three hours.

~~His prejudices make little sense but are simply~~
~~fanatical rantings about the Jews.~~ For example, ~~he in one of the~~
~~typical monologues in his cell he~~ ^{(points out that the laws of Moses caused the Jewish}
~~ed (to me)~~

~~(Streicher's infantile intellect and wild ranting led him into all sorts of incon-~~
~~sistencies.~~

on the subject of what a great ~~man~~ and good man Julius Streicher was — whose sole aim and ambition was to aid the Germans by establishing a German racial

people to form a race ^{as a race} and ~~that they have survived by~~
A moment later he was holding forth eloquently
respecting their own racial law. ~~What Streicher~~

~~claims he was trying to do was to get a similar racial~~
law set up to preserve the Germans! ^{Another touch of irony in the delivery}

of Streicher, the pro-^{cess}essor of Jewish literature, is this: that he became a rich and successful publisher
only because the Jews supported his business. "Supported" is not an entirely accurate word, but —
them, but because for a long time ^{all} available copies

of ~~the~~ paper were bought up by the Jewish people in
Streicher admitted, and even boasted, of this "support." In fact
order to prevent their circulation. ^{He thought that}
~~this~~ was a magnificent system, and ^{he frankly confessed without compunction} stated very definite-
ly that ^{he made} many of his articles ~~were made~~ as nasty and as
aggressive as ^{he could} possible, merely to stimulate ^{such} the sales.

Although he participated actively in stimulating
the pogroms of the Nazi Party, ^{Streicher} he denied taking part
in them, ^{He was proud of having been} and although he was the firebrand that touched
off the conflagration, ^{but,} he states that inasmuch as he
never killed a Jew, he ^{insisted that he was} is quite innocent. He maintains
that ^{I do} he does not actually hate the Jewish people per-
sonally, ^{"Streicher once swore to me. 'My}
but ^{against whom was} his struggle ~~is~~ born of deep understand-
ing." From a study of his speeches and his writings,
^{ed} we gather that his understanding ^{was barely} is extremely super-
ficial, but even ^{such} superficial knowledge probably
seems ^{ad} deep to ^{the dunghill} Streicher. ^{True to his fanatical belief,} He attributed all of the
misfortunes of the war to the international Jews and,
true to his fanatical belief, ^{he was} is firmly convinced that
the Nuremberg trials ^{were} are simply being staged by the
international Jews as a result of the pressure brought
about by the foreign Jewish press.

" he said to me when the trial was well along, "I

" Naturally, ~~he~~ ^{we} expect to be found guilty but ~~is~~ I am glad that the ~~trial~~ ^{court} at least ~~pretends~~ to be fair, because ~~he~~ ^(to testify and) may have a chance ~~to~~ reveal to the world the true structure of the international Jew and to warn the world of this outstanding menace." ~~He has~~ ^{On another interview he enlarged on the theme that he was being sacrificed.} a definite feeling of being a martyr and states the

"The entire history of the world has proven ^{"he orated"} that the bearers of truth and understanding are always a minority. The knowledge of belonging ^{among the bearers of great truths} to such an international minority gives ~~me~~ ^{me} the ^{inner} strength to survive all hardships of these trying times. It is fortunate ^{for} that Julius Streicher ^{that he} possessed ^{d. at} this inner strength" since, because of his violent, irrational, and obscene beliefs, he ~~stands~~ ^{stood} essentially alone against the world.

Dr. Robert Ley, the Reichsleiter and leader of the German Labor Party, ~~represents~~ ^{was} the only member of Hitler's group who demonstrated actual organic brain disease. He was one of the most ^{ardent} outstanding of Hitler's early followers ^{who} and, because of his abilities ^{as a rouser of the rabble} speaking and his enthusiasm for his work, rapidly attained power as the Third Reich developed.

~~Ley~~ ^{Ley} came from a small farmer's family, and he was the seventh of eleven children. His ~~youth was difficult~~ ^{childhood and youth were hard} because of a lack of funds, but he managed to attend elementary school, high school, and later the university. ^{As a student he worked at tutoring and} During this time, he gave lessons.

(had reached the point of qualifying for his degree)
~~undertook~~ odd jobs and ~~was about to receive his degree~~
of Doctor in Chemistry when ^{the First} World War ~~it~~ broke out.

Ley volunteered for the army and as he states, *put it,*
"~~#~~" participated in the war from the 6th of August,
1914 until January, 1920¹. He apparently felt that
~~he was still functioning actively in the German Army~~
~~even after the Armistice.~~ (He began as a private, was
appointed an officer in 1916, was decorated and was
wounded three times. On the 29th of July, 1917, while
acting as a flight officer, he ~~was engaged in an air~~
~~battle and~~ was shot down near Arras. His pilot was
killed, and he received severe burns and a head injury.
He was unconscious for several hours and was unable
to speak for nearly a week. After this injury he de-
veloped the stammering which characterized his speech
throughout the rest of his life. He was captured at
this time and held a prisoner by the French until the
end of the war.

— which explains the post-Armistice date in his ~~version~~
He returned to Germany in 1920¹ and received his
Doctor's Degree, ~~with~~ Magna Cum Laude. *record —*
an assistant at the University of Westphalia and *shortly afterward was*
~~during this period~~ married. *He soon* About this time he
becoming entered politics and became a national socialist in
leaving the University he became a chemist 1924. He finally worked with I. G. Farben but *soon quit because*
(with his superiors) left because of political differences *and entered thereafter*
politics on a full-time scale.

devoted full time to -165-

he," he boasted. "I gave a great many long, vigorous

^{In} ^{Nazi movement}
During the early days of the party, he apparently
"My duty was to speak for the Führer at times and places where he could not
worked very hard, giving long political speeches,
sometimes as often as one a day." He apparently had a
strong inner drive which forced him into his work, as
^{explained it;} he states, "It was fate. An inner voice drove me
forward like hunted game. Though my mind told me
differently and my wife and family repeatedly told
me to stop my activities and return to a civil and
normal life, the voice inside me, ^{commanded,} however, ordered
me in the categorical imperative, ('You must; you must',
and I obeyed the irresistible force, fate. Call it
mystic; call it God."

Ley obviously had ^{long} always been an unstable type
of personality. ^{the} His organic deterioration of ^{his} the
brain ^{was} ~~is~~ not due to syphilis or other communicable
diseases, but rather seems to be a spontaneous de-
generation, possibly accelerated by alcohol, and per-
haps influenced by his old head injury. At any rate, ^{throughout his}
^{official career, we can} see evidence of ~~his~~ instability in his every move.

His family life was ^{irregular.} ~~somewhat confused in that~~ ^{He divorced his}
~~after divorcing his first wife, his second wife com-~~
mitted suicide in 1942. From 1943 on Ley lived with
a young Estonian girl, but did not marry her, pos-
sibly because Hitler disapproved of such a match.

Physically Ley was a short, stocky, aggressive
type, ~~who~~ was totally unable to carry on a coherent

He

As with Ribbentrop, Hitler and a few others, I was fortunate in the case of Ley in being able to obtain the opinion of his secretary. She was

Youngest of the corps of Nazi bigwig secretaries, she was probably not quite so intelligent, but she was unquestionably prettier - which is probably what counted in Ley's view. Following is her verbatim analysis of her boss, supplemented by my own comments:

conversation without turning it into a ranting speech.

In this, he undoubtedly resembles Hitler. ^{Often when I} When talk-~~ed~~

ing with him in his cell, he would begin an ordinary conversation and as he became ~~more~~ interested, he would stand, ^{then} pace the floor, throw his arms out, gesticulate, and begin to shout. ^{Another indication of frontal lobe malfunction, was his} He demonstrated marked emotional instability, being very easily excited.

His memory seemed quite good except for recent occurrences, and intellectually he did not seem to be much impaired. The most important thing wrong with him medically was the loss of the power of judgment, a reaction which occurs most frequently following injury or deterioration of the frontal lobes of the brain. ^{particularly} From such evidence and from psychological tests, including the Rorschach ink-blot test, I diagnosed ~~It was this area that was affected in Robert Ley, and~~

~~his~~ inability to control his emotions and his colossal-^{were due to} ly bad judgment undoubtedly ~~are the result of~~ this actual brain damage.

~~Ley's secretary feels that for the particular job of Labor Leader, Ley was the ideal man. She states, "Only a man like Ley who is idealistic and optimistic anyway and who always saw the world through rose-colored glasses, who was always drunk and who, therefore, always saw people better than they really are, was the right man for the organization of the German Workers' Front."~~ Hitler had little knowledge of men. In this case, however, he had picked the absolutely right man. The fact that the position of a labor leader

medical and
From such evidence and from psychological tests, including the Rorschach ink-blot test, I diagnosed
actual physiological deterioration of -167- *his frontal lobes. Hence*

was always a point of attack was emphasized because Ley, himself, was no diplomat and seldom behaved himself in a diplomatic manner."

If we add this to our knowledge that Ley had actual impairment of judgment, we get the picture of a dynamic, active, outspoken, unstable rabble-rouser. There is little doubt that Hitler used Ley well. Through him Hitler was enabled to stir up the labor groups, and Ley's rosy pictures of the future, uninhibited by intelligent thought, must have been important in seducing labor into the Third Reich.

^{if the secretary adds:}
~~Ley's secretary also adds,~~ "He was rich in ideas. As a matter of fact he ^{was} somewhat fantastic at times. He had impossible and often impractical ideas and plans for the further expansion of the German workers' funds. For instance, he wanted to form a gigantic fleet of 100 pleasure ships for the German workers. He sought to alleviate the housing shortage ~~in Germany~~ by the leasing of gigantic building projects and the setting up of huge labor pools. ~~He attempted an old-age pension system.~~ He wanted to improve the old-age pension system and guarantee each worker a minimum of ninety marks per month."

~~Ley's secretary feels that some of his plans were sensible whereas others were purely fantastic. She further states,~~ "We who call ourselves Ley's co-workers

He loved children and animals and exaggerated this love like everything else.

call him a fanatic. ~~Ley was able to offer ideas for improvement on the most simple things in life and often talked about the way people are conducting their lives.~~

He lived in a world removed from reality. He had little knowledge of the every-day things of life, particularly the war, and did not want to know anything about it either. When he heard about it, he would not believe it. For instance, when he was told about the bad mood of the German people as the result of the constant bombings, he refused to believe it." This sort of thing, with his unshakable belief in Hitler's

wisdom and his unalterable conviction of a German victory, ~~made~~ ^{establish} his reactions ^{as} definitely abnormal. He revered Hitler as a God-like man. ^{As a matter of little-known fact,} ~~Ley, among his~~ ^{wrote a book so blatantly} writings produced a volume eulogizing Hitler to a ~~that~~

degree never before attempted. ^{Hitler had} (Even the Fuehrer was embarrassed) and the entire publication ~~was~~ destroyed with the exception of a single copy which ^{he} ~~Hitler~~ is supposed to have kept for his personal library.

who did not know that the inhibitory centers of his brain had ceased to function — that he quite
Ley appeared to his associates as a vital, ^{literally had no} tough, excitable, intellectually gifted individual. ^{judgment but only}

He was generally disliked because most people regarded him as a fanatic, and also ^{tendency to} his habit of ~~frankly~~ ^{spontaneous and} expressing his opinions ^{frankly and} directly to people ^{tended to make him} a social outcast. ^(But, by virtue of his affection, perhaps) He never bore grudges or engaged in the intrigues so common to the Nazi Party.

~~His secretary states that he loved children and animals and exaggerated this love like everything else.~~

These reactions of Robert Ley are for the most part direct manifestations of the imperfect functioning of his brain. His bluntness and lack of tact, ~~his failure to adopt the finer qualities of civilization,~~ his lack of concern for the opinion of others, his rapid shifts in emotion, his ^(uninhibited) intense reaction to a situation ^{and} subsequent dismissal of it, ^(the unpleasant) and his totally bad judgment, are all typical findings in individuals suffering ^(frontal lobe damage or excision) as he did. ~~His political judgment was definitely bad.~~

I asked him to prepare a short discussion on the question of his ideas for Germany and he responded with the following document which he entitled "Life of Fame?". I am including it here since it demonstrates better than any ^{medical account} ~~type of discussion can~~ his inability to ^{stick to} ~~continue on~~ one subject and his ^{tendency to} ~~constant habit of~~ turning ~~the~~ a simple discussion into a speech to the German people.

An ascending document this. And to
~~I need not add, I trust, that Dr. Ley,~~ so rational
~~the~~ ~~in~~ ~~the~~ ~~planning~~ an American - German conspiracy in
 which our Military Government would constitute
 itself a front and camouflage for a Nazi reorgan-
 ization carried on by Ley and his colleagues from
 within Nuremberg Jail ⊕ I need not add, I trust,
 that Ley's proposal was not enthusiastically received
 and acted on. ~~In fact, it is~~

172.187

~~33.20~~

~~33.20~~

~~33.20~~

~~33.20~~

305.69

Ley's last commission from Hitler was to organize the

At the end of the war, Ley had organized the ~~Hitler Free Corps~~, a group ~~formed from the German~~ ^{recruited from the men, women and youths of} labor front and staffed by labor leaders, ~~with members recruited from the men, women, and children of the German labor front.~~ The Free Corps was organized in groups of nine - eight men and one woman - and were to carry on guerrilla warfare, offering whatever resistance ~~they~~ ^{its individual} could to the advancing Allies. Ley maintained that it actually went into action near Berlin but that most of its members were killed.

When Ley was captured by the American Army, he made three mild suicide attempts. In the Nuremberg Jail Ley's attitude changed considerably. He stated that obviously the National Socialistic Party had done a great deal for Germany but that there were two things wrong with it. The first was that the time was not yet ripe. The world simply did not understand it. Secondly, anti-Semitism should have had no place in its program.

I asked Ley how he, the ardent old-time Nazi, could so quickly decide that his Party had been wrong. This answer revealed the simplicity of his thought and indicated his cortical deficiency. "I arrived at my conclusion by study and thought,"
In discussing this situation with Ley, his peculiar type of thought is revealed. He stated that ^{he said,} "throughout history it has always been obvious that

the right party was successful. In every war, victory came to the right side. Since ^{we} ~~they~~, the German people, led by N. S. ^{it is evident} ~~has~~ been so badly beaten, ~~he became convinced~~ that ^{we} ~~they~~ must have been wrong, and, since anti-Semitism

(so great a part) *one* *(I have decided)*
was a major feature of their program, ~~he felt~~ that
herein lay their error. *our great and grave*

anti-Semitism, [2/] *te* This naive approach is typical of Ley's reason-
ing and his solution of the Jewish problem is even

For, despite his condemnation of *was still convinced that the Jews constituted a problem in*
more so. ~~Ley felt that there was definitely a Jewish~~

soldier deserving the best of my broken fatherland; I found
~~problem. "When he returned from the War in 1918, he~~ *a hero, an old*
~~claimed that the Jews had the best jobs in Germany and we veterans~~
were allowed their leavings. I became convinced
~~to the detriment of the returning soldiers. He felt~~

that the Jews were the ones who had encircled and
attacked Germany, and all that ~~he had done~~ *I have done under Hitler has been* was simply
self-defense against the Jews. *"* Instead of killing

the Jews, however, which the course of the war proved

to be *(our)* a mistake, ~~he felt~~ Hitler should have left the
entire *(Jewish)* problem to *me*. *How simply I would have solved it without*

shedding a drop of blood! After all, I,
~~was both the labor leader and the person in charge of~~

housing throughout all of Germany. ~~He~~ *I* would have

solved the *(Jewish)* problem simply and directly through these

two avenues; firstly, by denying the Jews in Germany

the right to work, and secondly, by denying ~~the Jews~~ *them*

a place to live. *"Now see how good my plan would have been."*
~~Ley seemed to believe very definitely~~

without jobs they could not work and earn a living, without homes they
~~that if this had been done, since they could not work~~
could not have lived even if they need not work,
~~and since they had no homes, all the Jews in Germany~~

would have quietly packed up and moved elsewhere. *Is it not so?"*

[The solution on the surface is as simple as the
functioning of Ley's mind.

Ley also felt that the Nuremberg laws should have
been based on a more positive plan, although he was

unable to give definite suggestions. He felt then
^(if properly formulated)
that such laws would have been considered rather as
pro-German instead of being called anti-Jewish. He
recalled how St. Paul had once reconciled the Jews
with Christianity and felt that the Nazi Party should
have handled the problem in a similar manner.

He ^{anticipated} ~~apparently foresaw~~ the fact that in the trial,
the ~~pro~~^{er}secution of the Jews would be held against the
Nazi leaders. This bothered him terribly. At every
interview he ^{reiterated} ~~stressed~~ the statement that he himself
had never killed anyone; that he was a patriot and
would die a patriot, but could not bear the thought of
being called a criminal. Immediately after reading the
indictment ~~with~~ wherein he was charged with being a
war criminal, he became violently disturbed, ~~talking~~^{orating}
and ranting, maintaining his innocence and swearing
that he would never face trial against such charges.

In the middle of this tirade he marched dramatically to the far end of his cell, placed
He was very dramatic and would stand against the wall
his back against the window, flung out
of his cell, his arms outstretched and ~~pleaded with us~~^{ed} cried,
"me! Shoot me now! Do ~~not~~ ^{me} to shoot him as a German, but not to try him as a
common criminal!" *(again)*

I saw him rant on
When he was seen on the 24th of October, ^{1945,} and was
asked how he was getting on with his defense, he launch-
ed into a ^{violent harangue,} tirade as follows, "How can I prepare a
defense? Am I supposed to defend myself against all
these crimes which I knew nothing about? Hitler and

I were only working for the good of the people. If after all this bloodshed some more sacrifices are needed to satisfy the vengeance of the victors, all well and good." ^{Then} Here again, he placed himself against the wall with his arms outstretched and begged to be ^(When I again refused his request) shot. ^{more quietly?} He then continued, "All well and good; you are the victors, but why should I be brought before a Tribunal like a c--c--c--c--c--c--" At this point he stammered severely and was utterly unable to continue. When ~~he~~ supplied the word "criminal" to him he added, "That's it; I cannot even get that word out. I cannot even say it."

Ley obviously brooded over ^{his fate} this fact during the rest of the ^{that} day and ^{night} when ~~seen~~ the next morning ^{he} was still discussing it. ^{Then} At 8:15 p.m. on the 25th of October, 1945, Ley hanged himself in his cell and was pronounced dead by strangulation at 8:45. ^{His} technique ^{was evidence} is characteristic of his desperation. He ^{had} ⁱⁿ torn the hem from a bath towel, ^{ed} to form a noose and soaked the knots in water so that they would not slip. He then ^{fell} hung the improvised rope on the over-head water pipe of his toilet, sat down on the toilet, put his head through the loop, and stuffed his mouth with rags torn from his underwear so ² that he would not scream at the last. ^{He} then leaned forward against the noose and strangled himself by

^{sustained}
deliberate pressure of his own body. Such a death is
both slow and painful, st and demonstrates ^{d Ley's} his violent will
to die.

Medical and psychological examinations had indicated evidence of organic brain damage. This was particularly clearly shown in the Rorschach Ink Blot Tests ^(Because of the)
~~from which a diagnosis of frontal lobe deterioration~~ ^{which I had}
~~was definitely made. As a result of our studies, we~~
~~were~~ ^{made, I was} of course, extremely curious as to the cause of
the deterioration; ^{and} and when Ley so kindly made his
brain available, we seized the opportunity to make
complete studies. Post mortem examination ^{the} revealed
the definite evidence of brain damage of the deterior-
verified our diagnosis and
ating type in the frontal lobe area, which ^{would}
account ^{as} for his peculiar behaviour throughout his ^{career}
~~career~~ as Labor Leader of the Reich.

The final episode in Robert Ley's ^(career) life presents
gruesome evidence of the actual feeling of many of the
Germans for their leaders. His body was turned over
to ~~the~~ German undertakers who hauled it away in an
open box, which had been lined with butcher paper.
At the cemetery the box was dropped off beside a
freshly dug grave and Ley's nude body lay exposed
for a ^{some time} considerable period until a couple of aged
grave-diggers turned up. ^{(After a few caustic com-}
^{sipped up}ments on Ley and his works, they overturned the box

and the body fell some six feet, to sprawl face downward
in the grave, its only covering a ^(single flap) piece of coarse paper ^(butcher's)
~~with which the bottom of the box had been lined and~~
which had stuck to his back. Without further comment,
the diggers shoveled in the earth and flattened it
over to make a concealed grave.

CHAPTER VI. THE BUSINESS PARTNERS

In order to round out his political machine, Hitler needed the usual complement of legal and financial talent essential to any business enterprise. For the most part, these men were simply shrewd, hard characters content to hire out their services in exchange for national honor and the enhancement of their political and personal fortunes.

Outstanding in this group is Dr. Hans Frank who, as Gauleiter of Poland, sent millions of people to their doom. He was born in 1900 in Karlsuchi, Baden, brought up in Munich, and trained ~~as a~~

a lawyer, the profession of his father,

As a child ^{Frank} he was quiet but obstinate and preferred studying by himself rather than engaging in games with other children. His mother was very proud of his ability and relates that on his first trip to school he appeared with a newspaper in his hand which he had already learned to read. During his school years, he published papers and magazines for his fellow pupils and spent most of his time reading and writing. He received his Doctor of Jurisprudence ^{degree} in 1924 and in 1926 passed the legal state examinations.

^{Frank's major hobby was}
~~He was interested primarily in~~ mountain climbing and spent considerable time in his Bavarian home land, studying geology. He also was interested in the history of Bavaria and Munich and formed a large collection

books on these fields.
of this literature. He took over his father's legal practice following the latter's disbarment in the late twenties for embezzlement. Frank's father, however, continued to practice law in spite of his sentence by taking care of his son's judicial business while pretending to be his bookkeeper. When Frank became Bavarian Minister of Justice under the Nazi Party, Frank, Sr. was reinstated, but, ~~unable to forego his old habits,~~ *was caught* soon committed further embezzlement *again* and in spite of the influence of his son was ~~again~~ *again* disbarred *a second time.*

Frank did not volunteer for the army in ^{*the First*} World War ~~as~~ as did most of his fellow prisoners but was eventually called up by the army and served in the First Bavarian Regiment.

After the war he became interested in ^{*an*} Eckhardt's anti-Semitic association in Munich and soon became a member of Hitler's ^{*(then a small)*} earliest party and his eager servant. Frank participated in the Munich Putsch; and although not arrested, he left Germany for several months. He did not return to Munich until the latter part of the twenties; and when he did, he immediately became an active ^{*and enthusiastic*} Nazi ~~enthusiast~~. *His* law practice included numerous defenses of Nazis *during* the last years of the Republic, and he also served as Hitler's personal attorney.

When the Nazi Party achieved supremacy, Frank began to reap reward for his attachment to Hitler, and ~~was made active~~ ^{As} Bavarian Minister of Justice, He introduced a new technique ~~at this point~~ by carrying on an active law practice, ^{simultaneously} and, as a result, ^{soon had} ~~developed~~ ^{spate} an abundance of clients who sought to have their cases represented by a lawyer who was at the same time the highest judicial authority in the State.

Frank rapidly received more promotions and eventually was named a Reichleiter and finally was appointed President of the Academy for German Law and Reich Minister without Portfolio. He was always arrogant and forceful in his court presentations and ~~in spite~~ of his favor with the Nazi Party made numerous enemies amongst the people. ^{He was largely responsible for establishment of the thesis} ~~His legal ideas emphasized the~~ ^(German) ~~fact that the law was devised not for~~ ^(to protect the) individual ~~protection~~, but exclusively to benefit the entire ^{— that is,} nation which ~~was represented~~ by Hitler and his party.

In 1939 Frank was appointed Administrative Chief of Poland and from this time on occupied himself with the handling of the conquered Polish people. Frank's secretary seems to feel that this assignment to Poland represented an attempt on the part of the Party to relegate him to the hinterlands because of the pressure of his enemies.

His activities in Poland, however, did not suffer if this was a demotion, and he concentrated his energies primarily on the persecution and extermination of the Polish Jewish population. *More than any other person* The Polish people hold

was Frank responsible for the liquidation and deportation *of the entire Jewish population, which dropped from nearly 13,500,000 - nearly the entire (in only four years) 1,750,000 to only 300,000 by 1943.* Frank also emphasized the value of the German *Poland* in Poland, and restricted

Polish Jews, Frank aggrandized the status all education, music, museums, libraries, scientific institutions, and in fact any developmental techniques, to the use of the one or two thousand racial Germans in Poland. It was Frank's idea that the remaining *Polish* population should *degenerate* develop into slave labor.

Frank was an exceedingly active individual and extraordinarily well read. *even in the prison* Between conferences, during his meals, and during most of the night, he could be found pouring over newspapers or books. He has *interviews* an excellent memory and *had at his tongue's tip* is able to recall a tremendous amount of academic information. He was interested in art, and *unlike Hitler* sought out *circles* of artists and scientists whom he persuaded to give lectures and demonstrations for him. He was particularly interested in music and, unlike most Nazis, preferred Beethoven, Mozart, Chopin, and Strauss to Wagner. He found relief from political defeats and tension in music and *also* chess. He *employed* used his skill in chess playing not only

as a personnel-management technique.

~~for~~
~~as a means of~~ diversion but also, whenever he wanted to make up with one of his assistants whom he had treated roughly during the day, he would invite ^{the aid} him to a chess game and ^{skillfully} allow the man to win.

Frank had, in addition to an excellent intelligence, a keen imagination ^{and} ^{at} ^{he} ^{constantly} was always creating new ideas and plans. He had boundless enthusiasm but ~~seem-~~ ^{lacked persistence} and ~~seldom saw his plans through to fruition, often~~ ^{and} ~~unable to carry on with a new thought, losing in-~~ ^{all} ~~terest in a few days.~~ His secretary ~~feels that he~~ ^{analyzed him as} was an optimistic artist-philosopher who had the desire to lead his own life in his own way. Hewas extremely gracious to his friends but protected himself from the pressure of his political contacts and his numerous enemies by a wall of arrogance and uncooperative defiance.

^{Frank}
~~He~~ married in 1925 and has five children. His wife is a Roman Catholic as are all members of his family. Frank apparently ^(originally) was an energetic Catholic and ^{he} ^(as late as) published ~~in~~ 1944 The Cabin Boy and Columbus, a book with strong Catholic implications. He professed to be an "old Catholic"; and although, when he ~~had become~~ affiliated with the Nazi Party, he had left ~~the~~ formally Roman Catholic Church, he always sent his employees to Mass and asked to be included in their prayers.

Frank made a profound impression on his co-workers who were extremely loyal and in their discussions of

him tend to present only his best points. Apparently he was loyal to his friends and kind to his subordinates. ^{of the latter told me, with conviction that,} One summary states, "Dr. Frank had a soft heart. In order not to show this, he often hid it through aloofness and rough exterior." The subordinate went on to say, "When he wanted to carry through his ideas, he gave orders to his men without listening to their arguments, which naturally made cooperation difficult." These "orders", simple as they sound in the mere writing, ^{These white-washing} during Frank's period as Gauleiter of Poland involved the deaths of millions of helpless human beings. ^{Such statements indicate makes no mention of that. Neither,} an attempt at white-washing which, with very few exceptions, ^{did the comments of most of Frank's male} most of these men's secretaries and other employees ^{present, whom I questioned} present.

Frank, himself, ^{felt} feels very definitely that Adolf Hitler ~~in 1944~~ had developed an antagonism to him and ^{that} in his assignment to Poland ^{was a former ment} had punished him. He stresses the fact that ^{after his appointment to Poland} he was relieved of all political offices such as Reichleiter of the Legal Association and President of the Legal Academy. He feels that this was the result of public speeches which he had made at the universities in Vienna, Munich, and Heidelberg in which he had criticized and expressed opposition to the terror regime ⁱⁿ and the concentration camps. Frank claims that he attempted to retire at ^{at} this time but ^{that} such efforts and requests were not accepted by Hitler. ^{refused to let him}

Frank was captured on the 3rd of May and immediately following attempted suicide by cutting his left wrist, arm, and throat. The injury to ^{his} the throat was quite superficial but the ^{wrist} slashes on the left arm were sufficient to sever ^{ed} some of the nerves and he developed a moderately severe paralysis of his left hand.

In the prison he ^{preserved for the most part} presented a philosophical, calm, state, defending his activity by maintaining that he was only a titular head. He ^{left} maintained his cell in very neat condition and during interviews was courteous but formal. He ^{was} becomes easily upset and ^{was obviously} is quite emotional. He cries ^d when he receives letters from his family ^{and a} becomes violently angry when discussing violence which Adolf ^{less defensible policies} Hitler ~~had~~ brought upon the world. He ^{maintained} states that the indictment "is a political document which although somewhat exaggerated is a horrible commentary on our leadership". ^{In the end} Frank feels went on record to the effect that had decided that Hitler was "the most destructive phenomena in history, ^{a malevolent being who had inspired} and that he produced "a sort of mass insanity in his followers ^{with the} and as a result ^{that} they carried out his brutal ideas without question."

Frank developed a feeling of almost "God-like" martyrdom while in his cell. ^{He grew resigned to his fate and told me:} He states, "Someone must be held responsible. The leaders must pay for the crimes of Hitler and Himmler who escaped." ^{In the next breath, however, he} He denies his own guilt but says, "The question of individual ^{would}

claiming that

guilt is beside the point. If we do not take the blame, the whole of the German people must suffer."
~~He often answered at the whimpering of~~
~~He feels it is a disgrace to see the other major lead-~~
~~ers whine about their influence and tremble for their~~
~~own necks.~~ ^{now,} ^{said, "But"} ^{they} He states, ^{it} did not bother them when they dragged millions of people to war and made fine speeches about braver and more unselfish sacrifice for the Fatherland even unto death. Now that their own ^{lives} ~~necks~~ are at stake, they shiver and whimper and the ones most responsible bow out of the picture with cowardly suicide." Frank ~~has~~ ^{he had} apparently forgotten that it was only through the ~~expert~~ skill of American medical officers that his own suicidal ~~attempt~~ ^e was a failure. ^(the trial)

~~As death~~ ^{us,} ^{he} came nearer and nearer, Frank became ~~Frank has become~~ increasingly interested in

religion and ^{us,} ^{he} was baptized in his cell on October 25, 1943.

~~At about this time he explained that he felt his~~
~~He felt his~~ fate had been sealed by a destiny which

identified him with the most horrible crimes in history, and states that he is willing to pay for his

misdeeds committed in an enthusiasm for Adolf Hitler.

He ^{long} admits the magnitude of ^{the German} his crimes, but states that ^{he said:} "all my misdeeds were

~~committed in enthusiasm for Hitler. Now I have~~ ^{my share of the} ~~he has now confessed,~~ ^{and} ~~has~~ accepted his guilt, and will

pay by taking ^{my} his punishment. ^{Thereafter he} ~~He has~~ developed an

(almost hysterical calm and ~~has~~ set himself up as a

martyr, a representative of the great German people,

~~who is~~ willing to pay with his life, thereby fully

(to ~~atoning~~ ^{for} the murder of many millions. ~~He states,~~

"Many things have become clear to me in the loneliness of this cell. There is a definite irony which is far more devastating than any punishment that man has devised. Hitler represented the spirit of evil on earth and recognized no power greater than his own. God simply watched this band of brethren puffed up with their puny power and then simply brushed them aside in scorn and amusement." I tell you the scornful laughter of God is more terrible than any vengeful laws of man. Here are the would-be rulers of Germany each in a cell like this with four walls and a toilet, awaiting trials as ordinary criminals. Is that not a proof of God's amusement at a mass sacrilegious quest for power? "But are these people thankful for these last few weeks in which to atone for their sins and to recognize that they have been in league with the devil incognito? No. They worry about their own little necks and cast about for all kinds of little excuses to absolve themselves of blame. Can they not see that this is a horrible tragedy in the history of mankind and that we are symbols of an evil that God is brushing aside?"

It is obvious that Frank to himself still represents an individual controlled by destiny; a representative of God who has ~~sold~~ ^{was lent} his soul and ~~is now~~ purchasing it back at the cost of his life. This feeling ~~has~~ made

him draw apart from his cohorts, ~~and he has developed~~
~~a feeling of complete atonement. His tranquility is~~
~~almost hysterical in nature and his entire pattern~~
~~is~~ ^{was} that of an individual who, knowing that death is
inevitable, ~~has~~ ^{was} acknowledged its arrival by admitting
that he ~~is~~ ^{was} willing to pay for his crimes. In so doing,
Frank ~~has~~ achieved again the feeling of superiority
and dominance for which he ~~has~~ always striven ~~and is~~ ^{he was}
in fact, using the knowledge that he must die as a
basis to support his own ego.

On the other hand, with typical self-centered-
ness, he honestly ~~feels~~ ^{felt} that, by confessing and by
giving up his own life, he ~~can atone~~ ^{could gain} for his mis-
~~deeds and achieve the approval of the world.~~ ^{in atonement} ~~The~~ ^{unrecognized by himself}
superficiality of his ~~ideas~~ ^{idea} was demonstrated during
^{trial} the court session wherein the Vatican introduced
certain evidence. Frank through his lawyers
challenged the ^{Vatican's} ~~right of the Church~~ to introduce this
material and ~~at this time~~ threatened to leave ~~again~~
the Church again if the Vatican were to act as a
political power. Apparently he ~~is~~ ^{was} unable to realize
that this action demonstrates how superficial is
his feeling of atonement.

^{After} ~~since~~ his adoption of ~~this~~ ^{the} beatific attitude,
Frank ~~has~~ ^a become increasingly aloof and withdrawn

and ~~from his companions.~~ He has turned his entire emotional ^{to building up himself as a great and good man.} drive and keen imagination along these lines and consequently ^{he was} ~~has become~~ profoundly disturbed at atrocity pictures and documents ^{which tended to deny his virtue.} Following the showing of the atrocity films he was extremely upset and made a long and vehement protest against the men who could have done such deeds. He ^{demanding vehemently that such men} again emphasized the need for punishment, but then, in a lower tone of voice, ^{as} ~~re~~ reiterated his own complete innocence. ^{As a psychiatrist, I should say that Frank's} His beatific tranquility ^{merely} ~~hid~~ his ~~own~~ tension, and he ~~has~~ converted these tensions into an outward-appearing composure which protects ^{ed} him from his own feelings. ~~Such a~~ ^{This was a} technique is dangerous ^{ed} in that it removes him from reality ^{ed} and, should the pressure become too great, Frank is the type of prisoner who ^{could} ~~might~~ develop insane reactions. ~~Such a mental break would have to be considered a prison psychosis since there is no doubt that Hans Frank during his entire life, and up to the present was quite sane and competent and at all times knew precisely what he was doing.~~

Two other lawyers who also gained marked prominence are Frick and Seys-Inquart.

Wilhelm Frick, who has long been a power behind the Nazi movement, was born on the 12th of March 1877. He attended several German universities, taking his law degree at Munich and his doctor's degree later in 1903.

Frick became interested in politics about this
time and became a district court lawyer at Munich.
Here he met Hitler and was one of the first members
of the Party elected to the Reichstag in 1924. In
1933 he became Reich Minister of the Interior and
in 1943 became Protector of Bohemia and Moravia.

Frick ^{was} ~~is~~ a career politician, a hard, cold
individual, completely devoid of moral integrity
and human sensitivity. He viewed the entire Party
as a vehicle on which he might ride to power and ~~is~~ ^{he was}
~~unshaken toward anyone who stood~~
~~completely indifferent to the reaction of those who~~
~~were~~ ^{In jail and facing death, Frick did not recant. He maintained} ^{he believed} that the right of the
victor has ^{to rule as he saw fit - He contended} already been established throughout the
world and continually emphasizes the fact that the
Nazi Party accomplished a great deal of good ⁱⁿ
Germany ^{as} ~~in the beginning~~. He ~~was~~ ^{he argued} one of the impor-
tant developers of the Nuremberg laws and ~~still~~
~~believes~~ that they were scientifically and politically
^{In his own defense, however, he claimed} necessary. He ~~states~~ ^{he} that he "merely helped prepare
these instruments for German racial purity, and that
when the actual slaughter of the Jews began ~~he~~ ^{my} was
in a political position which prevented interference."
^{It was the same weak, hair-splitting defense of}
~~like~~ ^{anti-Semitism} Rosenberg and Streicher ~~he claims~~ ^{that he} only ~~to have~~
talked about the idea but ~~denies actual ordering of~~
~~death~~ ^{took no direct part in the programs.}. "I
He claims he never wanted the Jewish people
^{"he accused me." But} killed; ~~that the organization merely developed beyond~~

" ^{Frick never once displayed any} ~~any~~ ^{He exhibited}
~~his control.~~ He has ~~no~~ feelings of guilt, and at all
times ~~reveals~~ ^{reveals} an unemotional personality pattern. He was the
typical ~~of an~~ ^{self-seeking} individual who joined the Party and
followed along with it ~~as a~~ ^(the sole aim) method of attaining per-
sonal success.

Arthur Seys-Inquart is the second most intelli-
gent of the twenty-one defendants. He was born on
the 22nd of July, 1892 in Moravia. ^(now part of Czechoslovakia) He is a tall,
slim, and reserved individual, who ~~uses his high intel-~~
~~lectual ability primarily in reading and introspection.~~ ^{a student and a thinker.}
^{as a commissioned officer} He served in the Austro-Hungarian Army in 1914
and returned to complete his law degree in 1917. He
was wounded during the war in which he served as a
~~commissioned officer~~ and as a result of this wound
has limped slightly ever since.

Seys-Inquart entered ^{Austrian} politics in 1930 and between
1934 and 1938 worked with the illegal Nazi Party in
Austria, but refrained from actually joining it. He
was still considered a patriotic Austrian by Schussnigg,
who after his discussion with Hitler in Berchtesgaden
in February of 1938 appointed Seys-Inquart ~~the~~ Austrian
Minister of the Interior and Security. At this point,
Seys-Inquart revealed his true Nazi ~~tendencies and~~ ^{intent by opening the border to}
~~through his efforts the German troops, were enabled to~~
~~enter Austria.~~ [[]Oddly enough, at this time Seys-Inquart
was not yet a member of the Nazi Party and could not be

rewarded for his treachery by an official Nazi appointment. This deficit was soon remedied, however, and Seys-Inquart took over as Governor of Austria.

Following the conquest of Poland, he served as assistant to Frank during the initial period of Polish terrorism. In 1940 he was appointed Commissioner of ^{slaughter} the Netherlands and ^{he was} ~~is~~ responsible for the ^{state} ~~brutal~~ persecution and ~~treatment~~ of the Dutch Jews and the ^{brutal} forced labor program which was put into effect throughout Holland.

Personally, Seys-Inquart ^{was} aloof and cold in ~~and throughout my observation of him remained~~ his manner and ~~is still whole-hearted in his belief~~ ^{ly convinced} that the things he did were for the best of Germany. ~~He worked for the annexation of Austria because of~~ ^{the outcome of the war had left him all but completely} ~~an inner conviction that it was his duty to join the~~ ^{dejected} followers of Adolf Hitler. He felt that when the war began in 1939 Germany had passed the turning point of history, and it was clear to him that "Germany had lost political all its hopes." He states, "In view of the complete catastrophe of Germany and of the German people nationally, economically, politically, and spiritually, there is nothing left to do but wait patiently for the developing of the situation and hope that the suffering was not all in vain."

In this cold and introverted personality ^{where was} ~~we find~~ concern only for the sufferings of the German people. Apparently there ^{was} ~~no~~ room in his withdrawn soul

~~sympathy with towards~~
for similar feelings ~~towards~~ the countless thousands
of Austrians, Poles, and Dutchmen who perished as a
result of his direct orders.

The financial side of Hitler's business was
competently handled by Schacht and Funk.

Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht was born on the
22nd of January, 1877 in Northern Silesia, ^{at 68, he was still} ~~and~~ un-
doubtedly the most intelligent of the entire group of
war criminals, ^{and a} ~~He represents a~~ perfectly stable per-
sonality ^{a Schacht was a man} who simply ~~has been~~ interested in making ^{his} money,
^{an overzealous banker who} ~~private fortune~~ and discovered that the Nazi Party was —
for a time ^{an} ideal investment.

Schacht ^d ~~has~~ travelled considerably throughout all
of Europe, Asia and North America ^{he spoke} ~~and spoke~~ excellent
English and French. His personal life ^{was} ~~is~~ essentially
that of any sober ^{important} business man and he ~~has~~ always con-
ducted himself in a most reserved fashion. He had
been married twice, his last marriage being in 1941
to a woman thirty years his junior. His first wife
died a few years ^{after} World War I.

Schacht's ^{entire} ~~whole~~ career had been in finance. He began life as a
~~near run-of-the-mill banker but by~~ ^{however, by}
cial field, working originally in banks, and in 1923,

he claims to have been responsible for the re-arrange-
ment of the German mark and the stopping of the German
post war inflation. As a result, he became President

In defense of his Nazi activity,

not to strengthening Nazism

but

of the Reich Bank and employed his time primarily in developing German economy. He maintained that his entire efforts were devoted primarily to building a strong Germany, and in line with this policy it was necessary, *Schacht* *carefully pointed out,* of course to build also a strong army, navy, and air force. *Nevertheless he could not deny that (him)* Had it not been for Schacht, it is doubtful *had a thin pocketbook* if the Nazi Party would have done as well as it did financially.

insisted, however, that he

~~On the other hand,~~ Schacht disagreed with Hitler's basic policies and ~~states that he was against~~ most of the Nazi ideological theories. *But,* In spite of ~~this~~ *any* disagreement, he ~~was~~ *remained* one of Hitler's foremost public salesmen until ~~in~~ *when* 1938 Schacht felt that the overemphasis on armaments was tending to ~~upset~~ *There* German economy. *It is* probably ~~this latter fact which caused~~ *followed on* Schacht's open break with the Nazi Party and, as war approached, *Schacht* was replaced as head of the Reich Bank by Funk.

The Schacht defence was better than most. Possibly forewarning his postwar predicament, as early as Schacht, who is obviously much smarter than most of the other Nazis, in 1942 *he* began to point out *verbally* for the record the doubtful future of the German nation against the rest of the world. At this time he was living on his farm, *though he was then in retirement* but eventually his protests reached the ears of Hitler and he was placed in a concentration camp in 1944. *What part he played in the postwar conspiracy that led to the attempted assassination of Hitler in July, 1944, he* *never confessed to the* *in the attempted assassination of July, 1944.*

overjoyed when his
Schacht was released from the concentration camp
was swept up) by the American Army, whom he greeted with consider-
able enthusiasm, feeling that his days of prison were
over. He was ^{more than a little annoyed} exceedingly pained and profoundly shocked
when the Americans, instead of freeing him with ^{honor} enthusiasm
as a member of the German underground, listed him as
a war criminal and put him on trial. Understandably, he nursed
thereafter a ^{grudge} bitter ^{Nazis and} against both the German and the
Allied ^S groups.

Basically, Schacht's ^{was a} basic personality is somewhat constrict-
ed, ^{med} and all of his actions stem primarily from the in-
tellectual rather than emotional levels. His attitude
towards the trial ^{was} that, although he resented being
in prison and being listed as a war criminal, ^{he} ^{he himself}
He maintained that, obviously, he was not
realize the importance of hanging Goering and his
associates. Schacht obviously does not feel that he
is an associate and believes definitely that he will
not receive any sentence. He states, "I understand
that the German leadership has much to answer for
and it is better to determine the truth in court,
to establish relative guilt and innocence once and
for all. Of course, anyone who is innocent will not
be punished."

Schacht's defense was that,
He admits that, "I was fool enough to believe in
Hitler's peaceful intentions in the beginning. I did
support re-armament only to the point of insuring

Germany's security, but I became more and more suspicious as he tried to absorb all of the country's financial resources in armaments. [The turning point came when he dismissed von Fritsch who never wanted aggressive war and put in his lackey, Keitel^c. I then withheld funds for further armament and got kicked out as a result. [The more aggressive he became the more defeatist I became. Finally he threw me into a concentration camp in 1944. [As for anti-Semitism, I did exact an understanding from him that there was to be no discrimination in the industrial field as early as 1934. The basic problems were not really racial anyway. That's just a lot of nonsense. It was essentially a question of curtailing Jewish over-representation in business and in the professions. [I first found out about the atrocities while I was interned in Flossenburg. I could hear people being forced to undress and being made to march to their death. It was beastly. The only reason I can imagine why I was kept alive was in case I might be needed as a possible hostage or negotiator."

In these few paragraphs, Schacht reveals^{ed} his true feelings about Nazi Germany. A shrewd, highly intelligent, ^{fish-bellied} cold banker, he re-organized the German financial system and aided the Nazi Party

ChE

- 45 - Spent hours at a time for weeks on end with Hess in his cell - speaks good English -
- 46 - When the WW - Hildegard Fath, Hess/sec., short-loyal - intellig. mgmt affairs, friend of family. Hess reticent about early hist., didn't recognize change in status
- 47 - Goering, Shirach & Bohle (about speech)
- 48 - Throughout - Hess (except ref to gnaches)
Can re-emphasize Hess & astrology - every body etc.
- 49 - Finally - Fath
- 50 - Hess made - Hess
- 51 - Hess was held - English psychiatrists don't want to discuss aside from two chpts. wrote for that book
Say they weren't is defence - Kelley
- 52 - 1st exam in cell - first night - co-op gen phys x - attitude was formal, dressed in ~~uniform~~ ^{uniform} ex insignia - but flying boots lost military appearance - black - soft - two zippers - always clicking heels, attention - never sit - never shake hands - always aloof, frigid, Asked once why not like others -
"After the trial I'll know whether you are a friend or an enemy."

Hers ink blot with interpreter, though Hers speaks.
Explained they were ink blots and that K + would give
~~some evidence~~ of an idea of how mind functioned not
testing memory - how mind works without mem.

Int. one side, K other, sitting on cot, took responses
verbatim. Int. of blots too complicated - but

55 Line 3 - From the record I got the feeling that he could
well be in a sort of in-between state & might easily break
down with fairly insane manifestations in the face of in-
creasing pressure.

55A 4 - I ran down to Hers' cell immediately afterward &
asked explain himself. He was quite happy, asked me if he
hadn't surprised every body - glowing like actor first my let
how did I do - good wasn't I - did really good job acting, had
previous exp. England, only afraid of K - became with him ^{not}.

Asked him if remembered ^{self} pic of self & big shots shown
& admitted he had, though lied when put down & said
he thought then K had penetrated amnesia, K had kept
watching hands sketching showing. Bothered Hers.

But insisted mind more entirely clear - couple weeks later ~~that~~ said K that mind then was much better than when speech in court.

Mem question: why did you pretend amnesia? Got idea 1st in England when interrogated - when he said he didn't know, kept asking. When said didn't remember they'd by pass question. Kept saying didn't remember until finally large sections life simply slipped out of recollection. Since came to Nuremberg, mind better, almost as good as ever, but weak, fears easily (typical hysteria symptom).

~~Another time~~ Repeat question - prevent interrogation - get to see papers -

Pure rationalization of amnesic state - but proof that amnesia real & rationaliz'g. phony is that the vice to which he claimed to put it not effective & actually hurt lawyer's efforts.

~~He~~

57 - R tall slender, womanish, soft, flaccid, fem. smile. Quite willing discussing anything but always ends up on his own theories of race & blood - only live philosopher under psych. exam. Thwarted ~~by~~ - concept of philosophers didn't prepare me for discovery that R was mixed up in thought. Sch said reason thought deep - nobody understood -

Not typical? but R not very bright - phil or no.
most energetic in teaching theory of RT blood +
thought he had converted. Toward end said thought I
had gained excellent underst. of his system. Told
salary list - said he talked to Hitler during M. K. writing

59 - As the Nazi - Goering source

~~60~~ 60 - secret docs. R source

61 - took Heiden's Der Fuehrer into cell - R blew up -
called Heiden liar - Heard about Protocols in ~~America~~
Russia - but first saw in Munich -

62 - R source & friends & docs.

63 - R source

64 - R admits Myth hard to read - marked sections for
Hit not because Hit dumb - He also has marked copy
Herman Gilt - never out, represents how I work
organizing, sending back to R - agreement - only
expos. Ros. phil. in any language

65 - stress magic Catholic world lose faith - as people
not controllable.

66 - All taken from special memo written by R for K

67 - Heart to heart hours

68

69

70

72 - H.G. - First met when taking off drugs - early in
Aug. 1945 - flower up to ^{Bad} the Thunder - army term "look can"

146 - Doenitz - 99 A - Feigned insanity by
imitating sub marines - forming one to talk to -
perhaps nicest th. in jail - tall - spare - blue eyed
crinkly lines around eyes - never thought that Hit
had done any harm because Hit was man who rebuilt
Navy - Hit showed judg & character - never told Doenitz
my ^{political} secrets - Hit stuck to Navy - memory for

151 - Rader -)

Keitel - tall - classical Prussian, well built, long legs -
short - straight cropped hair - Passed rule that books
were out - Colonel's order - Class & brogans - later got
worse - Ley & Staewitz - short, pumchy, bald - in beaten-up
Gt Class & clothes.

~~Short~~, lean visaged, hard faced, medium ht. very
unpretentious grand admiral - Doenitz had stripes
up to sleeve - Am. admiral turned out to be Doenitz -
stopped visig - Navy neat blue suits.

152. Kaldenbunnes - ^{very} tall - almost acromegalic
prognathous - like Boris Karlof - scars not on face
but - thrown through windshield in civilian auto
accident - cowardly char who lived on his face -
typical bully - only one to break down & cry in cell -
Head of gestapo - great big bruises would be found -
scared of K. - very rugged looking

2 days before trial

153-A - Called in & told headache - did
lembos promise to confirm diagnosis
told about blood in sp. fluid high army officer
said "Are you sure he isn't faking ~~that~~ the blood?"
Stopped cold.

~~to hang after return~~

154 - Himmler - Ich samme

156 - Borman -

157 - Much time with Streicher - asked how why anti-
semitic -

158 - began to fight it. Added "I used to attend
jewish galit. meetings & heckle. Picked up & pitched out
& probably these also account for a-semitism.
Why the gornog?

164 - Ley - short, stout, pudgy, choleric - couldn't carry
on even short conversation without becoming excited -
K sit on lat Ley going up & down orating & spitting -
monologs -

165. wrote list -

167 - Sec with him 10 yrs - most attractive brown hair -
smart but less businesslike than others -

because it was a way to build a better Germany, and ~~hence~~ ^{hence} a better banking system of which he was the head. His reaction towards persecution was not based on any feeling for the persecuted but rather ~~his entire~~ ^{on} action was predicated upon the consideration of how the financial status of Germany, and consequently himself, would be affected. His arguments with Hitler were not based on any real differences of opinion concerning Hitler's aggressive drives, but rather upon Schacht's intellectual ^(conclusion) ~~determination~~ that such drives would result in defeat for Germany, ^{and loss of financial stature for Schacht.} and his final attitude of defeatism was not the result of any dislike of the Nazi system but rather ^{by realization that the} because he, having a better perspective, realized the eventual end of war bankruptcy for Germany, and for Schacht.

Schacht is ^{was merely a} a cold-blooded financier ^{without conscience,} who merely ^{simply} cooperated with the Nazi Party because it afforded him the greatest scope for the development of his own ideas and the rapid increase of his personal fortune.

When Hitler decided to replace Schacht as head of the Reich Bank with ^{Walter} Funk, he made one of his poorer choices. Physically and emotionally, Walter Funk and Schacht are direct antitheses, Schacht being tall and slender and extremely intelligent, and Funk

being short, fat, and only average intellectually. While Schacht is cold and shrewd, Funk is emotionally labile and quite susceptible to outside stimulation.

Funk was able to carry on as head of the Reich Bank primarily as a result of Schacht's skillful ~~of the Reich Bank. He~~ organization and has actually contributed little to the Nazi Party. ~~He was~~ ^{Funk} born on August 18, 1890, and grew up on a farm as he puts it "with the horses and the dogs". His education was limited to high school, although he took some work in literature and jurisprudence in a post-graduate college. He became a journalist and eventually became publisher of an economic-political magazine after joining the Nazi Party in 1931. He ^{was made} became Chief of Press in 1933, in 1937 became Reich Minister for Economics and in 1939 became president of the Reichbank.

Aside from Hess, Funk is the only other defendant inclined towards astrology. ^{Almost as soon as I began questioning him, he told me,} When speaking of his

birth he said, "I was born on a Sunday morning at 9 o'clock in the sign of the Lion, the particularly favorable constellation of Jupiter".

^{He was} Funk is an extremely self-centered individual, greatly concerned with his bodily ^{health} conditions and easily affected by other people. He ^{cries} frequently in his cell, ^{being} overwhelmed by ^{maudlin} feelings of self-pity. ^{He has} more complaints than any other prisoner,

and he made

The fact that slave labor was employed to convert his drawings into concrete and steel concerned him not at all.

~~and demonstrates no concern for anyone but himself.~~
He is definitely a weak, inadequate, soft personality type, ^{funny} and it is surprising that ~~he~~ was able to succeed in the big league ~~of the Nazi~~ hierarchy. He had a reputation for ready wit, and it is entirely possible that the other hard-working Nazi leaders found some recreation in his presence, a sort of attraction of opposites.

Finally the production end of ^{Hitler's} ~~the~~ business ^{enterprise} including problems of labor and construction, were looked after by Speer, ~~successor to Toldt~~, and by Saukel.

Albert Speer, originally Hitler's architect and the successor to Toldt as Minister of War Production, ^{can be written off as} ~~is of little interest in this study of the personality~~ of the war criminals. He essentially represents an extremely intelligent, ^{sensitive, creative} and highly skilled architect, ^{more objectively than Goering} boyish in nature and concerned only with his work.

^{as Michelangelo put back up} Speer became ^{explanated} interested in the Party ^{which he tried to Hitler in the same fashion} simply because it gave him an opportunity to practice his architectural skills. He joined the Party ~~as a~~ result of a speech Hitler made (in 1932 and soon was commensal by it) secured a job (to remodel one of the major buildings in Berlin. While his architectural skill was excellent, ^{but} his estimates on costs were poor and the ^{the Party's} resulting expense, far beyond expectations, caused a bitter row and brought down Munch's wrath on considerable difficulty for the Berlin group, and ^{a time, I spent} ~~thereafter, for~~ ^{Party} therefore he was offered no further work.

With Hitler's rise to power in 1933, however, ^{at first} ~~there~~ was no larger or serious problem. Besides, the Fuhrer liked Speer's grandiose style, he was commissioned to decorate several party rallies.

^{Speer was formally} ~~and was eventually~~ appointed Hitler's architect, ^{and} ~~and~~

Hitler apparently liked his designs, and ~~also~~ became

^{very} ~~friendly~~ with the shy, sincere, intelligent ^{whose genuine was to design the basic structures for the} man, and Speer eventually became a member of Hitler's ^{"thousand-year Reich."} private circle.

^{flattering} ~~, in turn, had no interest in anything but architecture.~~ Even in jail — where he surely

Speer feels that the 8th of February, 1942, was ^{that was the} ~~for on this day~~ a day of good fortune for him, ^{would not have} ~~Toldt~~

was killed in an airplane crash and Speer succeeded ^{than except as} ~~him.~~ ^{minutes of W.P. —} ~~As Chief of Production he was entirely responsible~~

for the care and welfare of his laborers, ^{he considered} ~~but he spent~~ most of his time doing architectural and research work

and ~~it was doubtful~~ if he was even aware of the ^{quint} laborers' existence. ^{Certainly he was not concerned} ~~He apparently did a fair job in~~

production but there is little doubt that this sensitive, creative individual was not the type of personality for this particular job.

Since his arrest, Speer has returned to his quiet, ^a ~~introverted type of behaviour,~~ ^{prisoner, Speer spent} spending his time making

architectural drawings in his cell. He shows ^{or defense} ~~little~~ ^{worry}

~~concern~~ over his fate ^{he made to me after} ~~and his whole attitude towards~~ the trial ^{was reflected} ~~is summed up in his comment~~ when a motion picture of the Party in its "hey-day" was shown.

"I was glad to see the pictures because they gave me an opportunity to again see the beautiful buildings

that I planned." ^{He may count twenty years in prison a small price to} ~~pay for the buildings he designed.~~

Speer's

responsibility for misuse of
slave labor as

In Speer we have a dreamer type, highly creative,
who merely was attracted to the Party because of the
opportunity it gave him and who apparently attracted
Hitler because of his sincere, intelligent personality.

^{quite} His status as a war criminal rests on his efforts as
Chief of War Production. It is likely that he handled

this job as he ^{else} handled everything, rather as an
architectural dreamer, ^{to whom buildings were more important than his own honor or a million lives,} rather
than as a practical producer
of war plans.

It is most probable that the great Toldt organiza-
tion carried on successfully in spite of Speer, rather
than because of him.

In concluding this discussion of the personalities
of these war criminals, we find we have left the least
'till the last. Fritz Saukel, whose major part in the
Nazi Party was as ^{chief} head of the slave "recruitment" ^{for Nazi} ~~recruitment~~
^{Germany, was} tion. He is without doubt the most insignificant and
least important ^{all} of the conspirators on trial.

Physically, he is ^{was} a small man; intellectually he
is only average; and emotionally he is extremely im-
mature. He is ^{full of} filled with excuses for his actions
but, when faced ^{crushed down by actual evidence of} with his crimes, he would switch to a vigorous statement of
his belief in the Fuehrer and ^{declare himself} states he is willing to
die for having carried out Hitler's orders. ^{The general, and} He re-
sembles a rat in a trap more than any of the other.

repeated pattern of his
behavior was

^{first}
~~defendants in his~~ cringing friendliness and desire to
"explain" his position, ^{then} ~~coupled with his final defiance~~
when it became ^a obvious that he is guilty of his crimes.
*were not swayed by flattery
of by specious "explanations"
(the destroyed)
of how five million laborers
sagacity*

Saukel was born on October 27, 1894. He attended
grammar school ^{for five years then went to sea as a} but since he had always had a desire to
become a seaman, hired out as a cabin boy after only
^{that was the end of his schooling. The rest of his education was picked up on}
five years' attendance, and took a trip nearly around
the world. He stayed with this trade and has visited
nearly every major port.
*several
fences
and*

During the first World War, ~~his boat~~ was captured
^{the merchant ship on which he was serving} and he became a prisoner of war in August, 1914. He

was held in France as a prisoner for five years and
in 1919 returned home. ^{Thereafter} He ~~gave up the sea at this~~
~~time and became a laborer and tool maker.~~ ^{factory hand, eventually,} While work-
ing in the factory, he became interested in labor

problems, particularly those of the German worker and
involved ^{the} himself in factional ^{that raged among} ~~strifes~~ between demo-
cratic socialists, communists, and other labor groups.

^{As} ~~At this time he became a social democrat, and took~~
part in many strikes and ^{negotiations.} ~~labor arguments.~~

^{Becoming} He became more active politically, and in 1927 be-
~~came~~ district leader of Thuringia, representing the
labor group and, eventually, became Governor of Thuringia.

^{swinging over to the National Socialist Party in 1933:}
He went along with Hitler in the 1933 elections and
^{Hitler} was rewarded ^{him} by the appointment as Reichleiter in
Thuringia. ^{during the war he was made} At the beginning of the war, he volunteered
as a soldier but was declared essential and eventually

Now I perhaps not curiously, Saukel actually got some satisfaction out of being on trial. ^{I saw pretty} he had a shred of it with him to the gallows. ^{he was} ~~not~~ accustomed to being — and to being recognized as — a second-rate Nazi leader. ^{he achieved for his ego by} ~~considerable~~ ^{considerable} ~~of~~ ^{of} ~~the~~ ^{the} ~~public~~ ^{public} ~~eye~~ ^{eye}

→ To be classed with the major Nazis, even as a war criminal, was for Saukel a real move upward in ^{his} ~~the~~ world.

became one of the general leaders of labor in the Four Year Plan.

Saukel's ^{political motivation was} ~~attitude towards politics is~~ that of a simple, uneducated individual who ^{accepts what the Party says} ~~has accepted a single~~ ^{and sets out to operate as if it were established truth.} ~~idea and has determined to overcome all opposition to this idea.~~ He was convinced that the Allied nations — ^{plus the} ~~in "international Jews," of course —~~ ^{done} ~~particularly the Jewish groups had caused irreparable~~ damage to the German people, and he felt that it was his mission to fight against these influences.

^{I had access to some of Saukel's letters to Hitler. They were} ~~In his writings to Hitler one finds an almost~~ ^{without question, he had for Hitler} ~~worshipful tone, and he has the loyal fidelity of a~~ ^{came to} ~~dog to its master.~~ He feels that perhaps Himmler and Goebbels ^{convinced} ~~ruined Hitler's viewpoint~~ and that these ^{Y were} ~~men actually were the ones who drove the party~~ ^{contended} ~~into the crimes against humanity.~~ He ^{owns} ~~feels that~~ his ^{own} ~~hands are~~ ^{were} ~~clean from blood guilt, and from the~~ ^{he was really} ~~seizure of foreign property and is confident that he~~ will not be ^{executed} ~~convicted.~~

^{sketch} ~~He achieved considerable self-respect from being~~ ^{sketch} ~~classed with the major war criminals, but is not actual-~~ ^{His point was} ~~ly accepted by them.~~ He ^{points out that} ~~while acting~~ ^{obtain} ~~as Labor Leader, he merely was employed to secure the~~

^{for Germany} ~~labor.~~ ^{He saw no connection between that and} ~~The fact that so many workers died in Germany~~ was not his problem. ^{which required} ~~His orders that the available~~ ^{Germ. wants to have first} ~~labor forces of conquered countries were to be first~~ ^{choice of} ~~employed in Germany to him simply indicated a solution~~ ^{that order} ~~to an obvious need and he sees nothing wrong in the up-~~ ^{hundreds of thousands} ~~rooting of thousands of French and Dutch and other~~

quite literally had

citizens so that Germany might ^{*win the war*} succeed. He ~~has~~ no guilt on his conscience, a statement which he often makes, because, after all, ^{*he had been told and he believed*} as he has stated, Germany has the absolute right and even the duty to mobilize labor in Europe in the same measure as she ~~is~~ ^{*ad*} sacrificing her own blood. He honestly believed in his own fashion that Germany was the saviour of Europe ^{*he had convinced himself that*} and was unable to realize the deportation of countless thousands for forced labor in Germany was for ~~anything but~~ ^{*good of all*} the ~~best~~ ^{*best*} for Europe.

Saukel is one of the few individuals on trial who apparently has neither the breadth of vision nor the depth of conscience to realize his guilt. He is small ^{*of*} in stature, both physically and psychologically, ^{*he*} and certainly ~~does~~ ^{*did*} not ^{*give the impression of being*} appear to be the type of person one would associate as a ~~true~~ leader in the Third Reich.

add from p211

CHAPTER VII. THE ORGANIZATION AND HOW IT GREW

Having thus scrutinized the individual characteristics of Hitler and his associates, let us briefly look at them as they functioned in the Third Reich as a unified group.

It is obvious that each one was an expert in his line. In addition each individual was sufficiently intelligent to carry out his part and possessed sufficient drive and energy to do his work well. Perhaps the best way to look at the total pattern is to consider the ruling group of the Third Reich as a sort of Board of Directors with Hitler as the president and each individual representing his branch of the Government.

On the executive side we find Hitler and Himmler, individuals with strong personalities, aggressive traits, able to meet people on their own terms, and expert organizers. From the sales point of view we have the diplomatic group, Ribbentrop, Neurath, and Papen. Ribbentrop is the front man, the individual without original ideas, who simply reflected Hitler's will and was able to sell it to other countries. Papen and Neurath represent the shrewd salesmen type who worked under cover and who were able by infiltration of their ideas to indicate to other countries their need to play ball with the Reich.

The advertising section was capably handled by Goebbels who was a master in the field of propaganda, skilled in every type of advertising technique. His assistants, Fritzsche, and at least for some of the time, Funk, are friendly extroverted individuals with persuasive tongues, who sold Nazi ideology primarily to the Germans themselves. In order to create these ideologies, Hitler had Rosenberg, a well-read but somewhat confused thinker, who produced a mass of philosophical doctrines sufficiently complex so that the average German was unable to grasp it. Hitler's salesmen capitalized on this complexity, taking from the total structure those ideological theories which best suited their purposes. Of course, the masses had to be stimulated and for this purpose Hitler utilized primarily Ley, dealing with the labor, and Streicher, influencing the general public. These men, both stimulating and fiery speakers, held countless thousands of mass meetings whose basic purpose was simply to stir up emotionally the common folk to a point where they sought a solution for their problems; then Hitler would speak and offer them a universal panacea.

Hess and Bohmann fit into the scheme of things simply as loyal subordinates, working in Hitler's office to carry out his basic ideas and primarily to protect him from an infiltration of concepts which might divert any policy from his own.

The Army and Navy were represented by personalities strong in their own right but entirely subservient to Hitler's will. Keitel, Jodl, Rader, and Doenitz were men who were extremely impressed with Hitler's skill in military matters and who did the detail work permitting Hitler to originate the basic planning. Obviously any military leader with ideas of his own would never have survived in this type of set-up.

In addition to these personnel, we find men like Funk, Speer, and Schacht, Frank, Seys-Inquart and Saukel who actually offered very little to the creative ideas of Hitler but were willing to throw their brains and energy into the effort in return for personal aggrandizement and success. They are individuals who might or might not have been successful in private business and who saw the value of early tie-ups with the Nazi Party simply as a vehicle on which they might ride to positions of supremacy in the Third Reich.

It cannot be too strongly emphasized that the total organization was a smoothly running unit composed of multiple personalities, each of whom brought occasional ideas of his own but for the most part was willing to accept anything said by the Fuehrer as gospel. The entire drive of the Nazi Party was not directed towards uncovering and

developing new techniques of government, but rather towards taking those ideas generated by the top few Nazis and making them successful throughout Germany and the conquered territories. They represent a national board of directors, skillfully selected and adroitly placed so that each individual is given the full opportunity to function in the best possible fashion.

Individual differences of opinion and arguments between top members were to a large degree suppressed by the Nazi system of prohibiting individuals from getting out of their specific cubby-holes. Each person had his assigned tasks and if he showed interest in the work of others, was dissuaded in such interest by Hitler himself in personal interviews. Each man, therefore, was free to concentrate his entire intelligence and energy on his particular problems. There was very little intercommunication and almost no communication with the outside world. The group, largely through the efforts of Goebbels who censured all extraneous information, was successfully isolated and was free to function to the utmost, devoting themselves exclusively to the task of building up the Third Reich according to the tenets of Adolf Hitler and developing the Nazi theories of German ideology.

Any discussion of Nazi ideology sooner or later must involve certain basic concepts and beliefs inherent in the German people long before the development of the Nazi Party. Many of these fundamental ideas are found throughout the world. On the other hand, certain of them seem peculiar to the German way of thinking and from our point of view may seem even absurd or delusional in nature. That they are not absurd to the country concerned is obvious since these people, 80 million of them, have defended them with their very lives. To us such beliefs seem predicated upon false knowledge and faulty logic. In an individual, such ideas would be considered definitely paranoid in nature. In Germany certain individuals, paranoid or patriotic, call them what you will, have for generations forced their ideologies upon the masses, who have more or less accepted their concepts as a part of their routine educational development.

To understand the German acceptance of Nazi ideologies, we must first very briefly review some of their earlier beliefs.

The fundamental national concept is that of the Folk or Volk. Herder first developed this idea, pointing out the conformity of the organization of human life to the laws of nature and believing that the individual derives his place from Volk heritage.

and Volk community, since "none of us becomes a man by himself". Schlegel and Schelling further emphasized the Volk and the need of the individual to sacrifice himself for the totality.

Hegel deeply influenced the entire German nation with his idea that "The individuals vanish for the universal substantial, and this forms for itself the individuals which it requires for its own purpose". One hundred years later, Adolf Hitler demonstrated the practical application of this idea.

A corollary of the Volk concept is the idea of racial supremacy which was emphasized in the latter 1700's and early 1800's by Müller, List, Gobineau, and Wagner. Richard Wagner emphasized anti-Semitic ideas and his son-in-law, Chamberlin, finally built the entire racial theory into a monumental edifice. Chamberlin disregarded all scientific racial studies and his contention that the differences between races are self-evident profoundly influenced the Nazi thinkers. The racial theories of Wagner and Chamberlin found expression during the 19th century in campaigns of anti-Semitism, and eventually were developed and played an appalling role in the Nazi system.

The concept of racial superiority is also reflected in the German concept of Weltanschauung. It is significant that this word is regarded as

specifically German and has, therefore, not been translated. Literally translated it would mean the way of looking at the world, and would as such seem harmless enough. Thus regarded, it may be supposed that everybody on earth has some kind of a Weltanschauung with which he regards his personal life and being. From this viewpoint every Englishman, Frenchman, American, Italian, and other national is sure to have a Weltanschauung of his own. Why, then, should there be anything different or dangerous if a German has a Weltanschauung?

The answer to this question is given at length by one of the high Nazis, now held as a witness. He states, "In the normal course of things there would be no difference and no danger, were it not for the fact that the German people have, unconsciously and by different methods at different times, been educated to believe that a fixed Weltanschauung was the most important thing in life and, of course, something typically and exclusively German. The individual could by no means choose his own Weltanschauung. The necessities of the Fatherland would give it to him, and everything in life, every phase of his daily activities - even of a private nature - would have to be subordinate to it. The Weltanschauung would be the medium through which to serve the nation best. The logical and consequent pursuance of this course,

no matter what Weltanschauung happened to prevail and by what party or individual it was preached, took such possession of the German mind that freedom of thought and even of individual life-building naturally had to decay.

This process passed unnoticed through many decades of German life. Intolerance increased as time went on. A Weltanschauung was a doctrine, a dogma, never flexible and leaving no scope for self-thinking or discussion, however earnest and truth-seeking this might be. Almost everything in political life was pressed into it and its often fanatic exclusivity. For example, Bismarck's blood and iron saying was, certainly without any intention of the author, promptly grasped by enthusiastic German die-hards as the foundation of a new Weltanschauung, completely forgetting, as they did, that it was an expression of the moment and no new German invention, seeing that quite a few other Empires and states were set up by nothing less than blood and iron. What they most of all failed to see, however, was the enormous harm the preaching of such a theory has done to Germany. There are numerous other examples of the similar and wholly unnecessary raising of one-time famous sayings to national intoxication of the German mind that has to no small extent led to such national disaster."

Another concept dear to the German people is the idea that from the Volk is developed a hero, who, like Hegel's heroic personality, "shapes the course of history" and while "he may trample on many innocent flowers and destroy many things in his way", must eventually forge determined will into a single hammer. All Nazi philosophy stresses these ideas and the Nazi Party merely picked them up "ready-made".

Other concepts which Hitler utilized were those of the totalitarian state and the use of an "elite class", intermediate between the Volk and the Fuehrer, who acted as the instrument for the execution of orders.

With this brief historical summary in mind, let us now see how Hitler and his group made use of such concepts. As you will observe, they introduced no new ideas, but merely acted to carry out the ideas of the philosophers to practical end-points. One way of looking at Nazi Germany is that it represents one of the few occasions in the history of the world when individuals actually put into effect the hypothetical concepts of a group of speculative philosophers. The National Socialist State rests primarily on three concepts; the Volk, the Fuehrer, and the Party. The Volk was developed by Hitler as a fundamental state in which the people and state are conceived as an inseparable unit. The State is the form in which

the people attain historical reality. The Volk is made up of individuals but is not a case of mere individual aggregation, but rather is a living creature, a spiritual configuration in which the individuals are included through common racial condition in blood and in spirit. The people are an entire living body which is racially uniform and which is held together by common history, common fate, common mission, and common tasks.

Rosenberg developed his ideas of the Volk and race primarily from Chamberlin's works, Gunther's studies, and Madison Grant's writings on "The Fall of a Great Race". Rosenberg's book, The Myth of the 20th Century is the basic Bible of the Nazi racial doctrines. He believes that a race is a group of human individuals with the same or similar marks which are inherited. These marks are physical as well as mental. He differentiates races from nations, stating that nations do not always consist of the same race, but emphasizes the fact that a nation will not be successful throughout history unless it purifies itself so that it becomes racially homogeneous. He states, "The recognition of race means the recognition of the way of life of the respective race and means therefore respect to that race." It is his idea therefore that any race which

has become diluted by other races can no longer be recognized, and hence, no longer can command respect. Rosenberg admits that there is no such thing as a French or German or English race, but that these are respective nations, bound together by common language, common political ideas and common fates. He also feels that there is no true Jewish race left because of their inter-mingling with Arabs and other Oriental types. It is here that he makes his biggest differential point, indicating that although not a true race, the Jewish groups represent a nation made up of racial types different from the Western European nations. He feels that they are Oriental in origin and consequently should not intermingle with the white groups.

Rosenberg has also emphasized, following Chamberlin, the superiority of the White over other racial groups and the supremacy of the Aryan over other White groups. According to Rosenberg's ideas, therefore, we wind up with Western Europe composed of several nations, resulting from the intermingling of some five White races. The Jews represent another nation which is again made up of intermingled Oriental races. Not being white, therefore, they represent a lower type than the European group.

Rosenberg's idea was first of all to weed out all of the Jews in Europe - that is, get rid of what

to him was the lowest group and then gradually weed out the other white nationalities, leaving only a pure Aryan strain. This simple idea would have involved essentially the annihilation or the segregation of practically all the peoples of Europe except Rosenberg's "true Aryan groups". The diagnosis of these Aryans was for Rosenberg and Streicher extremely easy. They had blond hair and blue eyes. All other people fell into two categories - other White, but non-Aryan, or Jewish and Oriental. Such a concept is obviously absurd, and yet, this is the idea which has been hammered into the German people for the last 25 years. The idea was reinforced by giving it a religious significance which was to replace the non-German religion of Christianity.

Rosenberg

In The Mythos, Rosenberg states, " new faith is arising today. The Myth of the blood, the faith to defend with the blood the divine essence of man; the faith embodied in clearest knowledge that the Nordic blood represents that mysterium which has replaced and overcome the old sacraments."

Rosenberg's ideas of the blood were independently suggested by Darre', who in his work, Blood and Soil, related the basic German blood of the peasant to the soil with which he worked. Darre' developed a work of a cycle which included the peasant during his life

Rosenberg

working the soil where on death the blood is returned to the soil, to be eventually, through the medium of ^{fodder eaten by meat animals} ~~vegetation and crops~~, ^{directly consumed by} returned again to ~~another~~ German peasant. In this way the German blood, apparently ~~(through the)~~ fertilization of German soil by German bodies, is kept revolving in a sort of cycle from German to German.

No one ever worked out a theory to account for

~~Darre emphasized the farmer and peasant group and became their natural leader.~~ What happens to the blood of other groups is not so clearly known, but it became an almost obsessive desire of the Nazi leaders to gain control of all German blood, no matter whence it had escaped.

Himmler

This was particularly Himmler's idea, and Himmler sent out orders throughout all of the conquered countries in an endeavor to recapture this German blood. In the Ukraine, for example, an order was published, stating that all blue-eyed, blond-haired children were to be given adequate rations, since they were obviously of German origin. They were to be kept alive so that they could be returned to the Reich. All other children, obviously non-Aryan, were to be allowed to die.

The Third Reich adopted the viewpoint that soil was not necessarily found where Germans had lived and died. German soil was to be found only in the actual boundaries of the Reich itself, and the idea

was to transplant entire cultures into and from these boundaries, so that eventually people living within the Reich would become a homogeneous structure differing totally from people living without. Again, the differences boil down to the blond-hair, blue-eye pattern.

The second principle of the Nazi Party was the Fuehrer, and the Fuehrer principle, or the Fuehrer principle, represents the structure of the totalitarian state. It demonstrates the end development of the idea of one infallible leader, whose decisions are final, and whose will is unchallenged. Under the Fuehrer are his representatives, who are equated as Fuehrers by those below them. The concept progresses downward until you reach the common man, who is Fuehrer to no one.

The idea of the Fuehrer himself is essentially simple. He represents the natural laws inherent in the people, but is not really their representative; he rather is an expression of the people's beliefs, wishes and collective desires. His will is not the subjective individual's will of a single man, but the collective national will embodied within him in all its objective historical greatness. This will is present in the people, but the Fuehrer raises it

to consciousness and discloses it.

This idea may seem extremely complicated to people not educated to it, but it certainly facilitates action by the Fuehrer for the Fuehrer. Representing as he does the will of the people, anything which is done or said in his name becomes law, since obviously it is the people's will. The principle involved is one of identification of the ruler with the people whom he rules. It gives the Fuehrer a unique and powerful position. Frick sums up the whole idea when he states, "The unity of the Party and the State finds its highest realization in the presence of the leader and chancellor who is the leader of the National Socialist Party, the political head of the State, and the Supreme Commander of the Defense Forces". That last title is extremely important in enforcing the Fuehrer Principle, even in Germany.

Dr. Ley, who was more unstable than any of the other German leaders, would equate Hitler at an even higher level.-- "The National Socialists believe in Hitler, who embodies their will. Therefore, our conscience is clearly and exactly defined. Only what Adolf Hitler, our Fuehrer commands, allows or does not allow, is our conscience." Ley apparently really believed in this concept for only a few days before his suicide he wrote, "Hitler's fame is

unassailable. He crowned his great work and his famous deeds with the supreme sacrifice. The highest fame belongs to him, and he will appear to posterity as the shining hero of this period even though life continues its hum-drum course."

Hitler blatantly admitted his own position, for in his speech in 1933, he stated, "We have in our movement developed loyalty in following the leader, a blind obedience of which all others know nothing and which gives us the power to surmount everything."

Naturally, the Fuehrer principle applied not only to Hitler, but to all subordinate leaders, and this develops the third pillar of the Nazi State - the Nazi Party. The Party represents a group in actual control of the country. Goebbels sums it up by stating, "The Party must always represent the hierarchy of National Socialist leadership. This minority must always insist upon its prerogative to control the State." The control of the State was actually in the hands of the Party. The control of the Party was definitely in the hands of the Fuehrer. Ley stated this very simply - "The National Socialist Party is Hitler, and Hitler is the Party."

The symbols of Nazi ideology - the flags, the membership requirements, etc., are of some interest,

but certainly not as important as a brief survey of how these ideological principles have been promulgated throughout Nazi Germany. Goebbels bore the brunt of the propaganda campaign and employed every medium known to modern advertising. It was felt, however, that the older people would probably not be too susceptible, and primary emphasis was placed upon educating the youth.

Schirich

Hitler's statement, "He alone who owns the youth, gains the future" is demonstrative of this idea, as is also this speech, "When an opponent declares I will not come over to your side, and you will not get me on your side, I calmly say, 'Your child belongs to us already. A people rules forever. What are you? You will pass on. Your descendants now stand in the new camp. In a short time they will know nothing else but this new community.'"

The Third Reich in its educational campaign stressed its basic ideologies. In one handbook, we find, "This racial education is to start already in the lower grades, and should have the ultimate effect that no boy or girl leaves school, without having gained perfect knowledge about the necessity and essential elements of blood purity."

A section of a German teacher's guide is even franker emphasizing the political rather than the

education role of the schools. It states in its preface, "All education that has a plan is based on a given order." The national-socialistic system of education is not, from its origination a work of pedagogic planning, but one of political struggle and of the laws of that struggle. The S. A. and Hitler Youth were originally meant to be fighting units of the movement, guaranteeing the political victory of National-Socialism. But out of these fighting units, a new living order emerged very quickly, in which simultaneously a new principle of education began to take effect.

"The pre-eminence of politics over pedagogics, denied by the educational optimism of the time of the Weimar Republic could not be represented more strikingly. The victory of the National-Socialistic movement, bringing to power a new symbol and a new basic outlook of man, terminated the period of educational optimism, and found a new way of answering the question of the character of education.

"The National Socialistic revolution of ideology has replaced the deceiving picture of the educated personality with the figure of the real German, determined by blood and historical fate; and instead of the humanistic idea of education, in existence until only recent times, it has built up an educational order originating from the community of the actual

fight. Only out of the spirit of this political breeding can grow true education, as the central task of the coming school, which makes the young German not less but more susceptible to enthusiasm and leads to efficiency. Every form of education taking its course outside of this national-socialistic educational reality, remains abstract and foreign to the national character."

Every known method of implanting Nazi ideology was utilized. Ordinary text books on chemistry and physics contained sections on anti-Semitism and the glories of the Aryan race. Histories were re-written, so that all Germany's heroes fitted with the Fuehrer concept, and of course, no leader who had ever failed in conquest was included.

Special propaganda books were put out - the most odious being those of Der Sturmer Press, headed by Streicher. In one of them, The Poisonous Mushroom, a book of Fables for young and old by Ernst Heimer, published in 1938 we find on page six, "It is almost noon," he said, 'now we want to summarize what we

have learned in this lesson. What did we discuss?'

"All children raise their hands. The teacher calls on Karl Scholz, a little boy on the first bench. 'We talked about how to recognize a Jew.'

"'Good! Now tell us about it!'

~~This idea of Streicher that he could tell Jewish people~~
~~not only by their facial configurations but even by~~
~~their odor was easily put to test.~~ *He couldn't, of course.* One of my top
interpreters was a German refugee who had escaped
from Germany in 1939, ~~Although he was Jewish, he~~
like many other German Jews, ^{he} was typically "Nordic" in appearance -
~~this~~ blond hair, blue eyes, ~~and~~ slender athletic
physique.

He and Streicher and I got along quite well, ~~and~~
One day Streicher gave me some notes on the Jewish
question. He warned me to have them translated by
an "intelligent Aryan" as a "Jew would falsify the
translation". He then handed the notes to my
Jewish interpreter saying, "Here ¹ you do it ² you're
a good German". ~~Apparently Streicher's system of~~
~~physical diagnosis is not a practical technique!!~~

Again on page 32 of The Poisonous Mushroom we
find the following;

"Inge sits in the reception room of the Jew
doctor. She has to wait a long time. She looks
through the journals which are on the table. But
she is much too nervous to read even a few sentences.
Again and again she remembers the talk with her
mother. And again and again her mind reflects on
the warnings of her leader of the B.D.M. (League of
German Girls) - 'A German must not consult a Jew

wits. Before the Jew can grab hold of her, she hits the fat face of the Jew doctor with her hand. Then one jump to the door. Breathlessly Inge runs down the stairs. Breathlessly she escapes the Jew house."

This is a typical attempt to attack the Jewish intellectual and professional group. It is crude, childish propaganda, typical of ^{the} Streicher's ~~bestial~~ *approach* ~~personality.~~

Also typical - but this time of all Nazi loquacity and of the egoism of the major Nazis - is the technique. Apparently the same book on page 61 we find him concluding with a plug for himself: employed by Heinicke to accuse his book of publication. Starting on page sixty-one is this bit of blatant flattery.

"The pimpf (Hitler boy between 10-14) so far has not said anything. Suddenly he stops. Then he grasps his two friends by the arm and pulls them away. They stop in front of a bill-board. They read a large poster. It says:

JULIUS STREICHER
MAKES AN ADDRESS IN THE PEOPLE'S HALL
ABOUT
"THE JEWS ARE OUR MISFORTUNE."

"That is where we go!" shouts Konrad, 'I wanted to hear him speak for a long time.' 'I have heard him once before at a meeting two years ago,' says Erich. 'Do tell us all about it!' the two pimpfs beg. The Hitler youth recounts:

"The meeting was over crowded. Many thousands of people attended. To begin with, Streicher talked of his experiences in the years of struggle, and of the tremendous achievements of the Hitler Reich.

Then he began to talk about the Jewish question. All he said was so clear and simple that even we boys could follow it. Again and again he told about examples taken from life. At one time he talked most amusingly and cracked jokes, making all of us laugh. Then again he became most serious, and it was so quiet in the hall that one could hear a needle drop. He talked of the Jews and their horrible crimes. He talked of the serious danger which Judaism is for the whole world. "Without a solution of the Jewish question there will be no salvation of mankind." That is what he shouted to us. All of us could understand him. And when, at the end, he shouted the "Seig-Heil" for the Fuehrer, we all acclaimed him with tremendous enthusiasm. For two hours, Streicher spoke at that occasion. To us it appeared to have been but a few minutes."

~~This sort of propaganda seems extremely ugly and obvious to us, but it must be remembered that it was the daily diet of the German people. Every book or magazine or newspaper, every radio program, everything they read or heard, was censored and slanted to emphasize these ideologies. This, of course, meant that contact with other concepts arising in outside countries must be held to a minimum. This was not too difficult, for the average German has always seemed to prefer his way of life to that of his neighbors. Consequently,~~

the German people were easily led into a cul-de-sac of belief, whose only exit was blocked by Nazi propaganda and censorship.

Another factor in the ready acceptance by the German people of the Nazi ideas was that the people were already conditioned to them by long years of education. After all, they were their own concepts. What matter that Hitler made them simpler, more primitive, and less human? These ideas were emotionally a part of the people, and when Hitler re-emphasized them, he mobilized the entire emotional content of the people for his Reich.

It is here that we begin to see how Hitler and his henchmen were able to take over the bodies and minds of 80 million people. The path was already laid in the homogeneity of the German nation, and its previous conditioning to its ideologies. Hitler seized its attention by his opportunistic emphasis of its present problems. For these he promised solution. This gave him his start.

He next captured emotional control of the people by appealing to their conditioned beliefs and concepts. Since they were thinking emotionally, they could not think intellectually, and fell easy prey to Goebbels, Streicher, Ley and the other propagandists. These emotional responses were not of course awakened in everyone. Every country has its thinkers. For Hitler,

these people who responded intellectually were a terribly real danger. Here Goering, Himmler, Kaltenbrunner, and the other assassins were important. They merely did away with all opposition. Once Hitler came into power, emotional thought became safer for the average German than intellectual, mature response. Gradually, this trend prevailed and opened the way to the atrocities and horror of the Third Reich.

Thus we see that as soon as Hitler had secured his position, he proceeded to solidify his status by his emphasis of old German ideologies, coupled with a system of liquidation of any who opposed him. This technique is surprisingly effective, since most people accept propaganda easily, especially when it is based on old beliefs. The elimination of all disbelievers simply assures a nearly 100% result. Moreover, Hitler's approach on the ideological front was less spectacular than his political advance.

These were the general concepts that Hitler employed but it is important to note that in order to set them into operation, he took advantage of the chaos following the defeat of Germany in World War I. His success was in a large part a result of the times. He utilized all the discontent, frustrations, and fears of the period and welded them into propaganda weapons for the party. He was not alone in his ideas. Over forty parties were active in 1919, most of them made up of returning war veterans, who were unable to find work and who were extremely resentful of their countrymen who had stayed at home and got rich while they risked their lives in what was now recognized as a futile war.

These veterans were discontented with everything. They felt they were not appreciated. They were offered jobs below their capacities, or could find no jobs at all. Some of them like Ley believed the Jews had the best jobs to the detriment of the returning soldiers. Others blamed the communists, but all were ripe for revolution. Hitler seized upon all these hatreds and made them his own. He persuaded other veterans to rally to his cause, and it is no coincidence that almost all of the top Nazis served in the armed forces in the first World War. He utilized the most popular and obvious source of discontentment - their defeat

and the resultant Treaty of Versailles - and emphasized its strangling results in his every word.

In 1919 Hitler visited the German Worker's Party founded by Anton Drexler, and joined as its seventh member. He immediately took over the propaganda work and started to organize mass meetings, at which he and Gottfried Feder were the principal speakers. Feder, a university graduate in engineering, was the methodical speaker on party doctrine, whereas Hitler, then thirty years old, worked on the masses with his extraordinary gifts of oratory as the enthusiastic and passionate propagandist. It was not long before Anton Drexler retired into oblivion, from which he never again emerged.

Hitler then became party leader. The name was changed into Nationalsozialistische Deutsche Arbeiterpartei or N.S.D.A.P. Its official party program, embodying twenty-five points, was publicly proclaimed by Hitler on February 24, 1920 at a mass meeting in Munich. This was his first great success and the foundation of a party that was to become the biggest German political life had ever experienced. The battle-cry in all his first speeches was the fight against the Treaty of Versailles. It was a very sound basis for the

canvassing of votes in Bavaria, which, at that time, was the only part of the Reich where national feeling had retained its former standard, even in the Government, which strongly objected to any interference in its affairs by the social-Socialist Reich Government in Berlin.

The Party grew steadily from 1920 to 1923, showing its increasing strength by numerous mass meetings and Party rallies all over Bavaria, chiefly in Munich and Nuremberg. Its activities in most other parts of Germany, with the exception of Saxony, were very weak. The NSDAP was, in fact, not well known to most Germans before the Putsch of 1923, but in Bavaria, everything was done to consolidate its strength - the S.A. was drawn up and later the SS, the latter as a bodyguard for Hitler, and in order to protect meetings against Communist interference.

The Putsch took place on November 8 and 9, 1923 in Munich. Hitler had secured the cooperation of Germany's most renowned military leader, General Ludendorff, as well as ^{that} of several national movements and societies. The idea was to set up a National Reich Government in Munich and march on Socialist Berlin and dethrone the Reds. It was calculated that the army would fall into line with the

national uprising, and that several prominent members of the Bavarian Government would wholeheartedly cooperate. The army did not move, and the Bavarian Government double-crossed Hitler and Ludendorff. Sixteen men were killed, Goering was wounded, but escaped, and most of the other leaders were arrested and tried for high treason. The NSDAP was forbidden and dissolved, Hitler was sentenced to five years and imprisoned at Landsberg together with Rudolf Hess, Walther Hewel and others. Here he dictated his book, Mein Kampf, to Hess. He was released at the end of 1924 and re-opened the Party in the beginning of 1925.

Hitler now extended his activities all over Germany. Over and again the Party was forbidden in several German states, but the ban was removed just as often. The big Party rallies were no longer confined to Bavaria but took place all over the Reich. Nevertheless, progress was comparatively slow. In the Reichstag of 1928, comprising well over six hundred members, the NSDAP had but twelve. Then sudden change came. Unemployment and social disorder increased tremendously. In the elections of September, 1930, the NSDAP membership in the Reich Parliament rose from twelve to one hundred seven. The next elections in July, 1932 increased

the number to two hundred thirty. A fortnight later, Adolf Hitler was offered the position of Vice-Chancellor in the Reich Government headed by Franz von Papen, but refused, declaring that he would either become Chancellor or stay outside altogether.

Goering, as leader of the strongest party in Parliament, became President of the Reichstag. In several states, such as Thuringia and Brunswick, National Socialists had gained seats in the Cabinets. The Government of Brunswick gave Hitler a Pro-Forma State job and thus made him a German Reich citizen which he had not been up until then. This was necessary for the Presidential elections in 1932, in which Hitler opposed Hindenburg and lost. It was, however, an eye-opener to the nation to see that Hitler polled some 14 million votes even against such an adored national hero as Field Marshal von Hindenburg. There were two elections for the Presidency at the time, as Hindenburg in the first by no means acquired the majority provided for in the constitution. In the second poll, the Communists - as a rather amusing paradox - had to vote for the old Monarchist and Field Marshal to keep their arch enemy, Hitler, out.

In 1932 there were no less than four major Reich elections, to say nothing of State elections. Party hatred, passions and everlasting excitement dominated German life in that year, social discontent and unemployment rising to dangerous heights. Communism and National Socialism, the two extremes, reaped the fruits of all this. Communist membership to the Reichstag passed the hundred mark. Hardly a day passed without a political murder. Knife-stabbing and shooting was nothing out of the ordinary at mass meetings. Not only National Socialists and Communists, but also many a policeman lost his life in those days. It was a year of tense and lasting crisis. The Government had lost its power and was no longer in a position to deal with the situation other than by police methods, which in time proved absolutely inefficient. Everybody was wanting something to happen, something radical to clear the sticky atmosphere.

After the July election, the Papen government was hopelessly outvoted; in fact, it represented hardly ten per cent of the voters. After Hitler's refusal in August, 1932 to join the Government, Papen persuaded the President in September to dissolve the newly-elected Reichstag, hoping against hope to get together some sort of a coalition government

from a new Parliament. The new election took place in November, the NSDAP losing about two million votes, but still having nearly two hundred members, and thus constituting the largest party. The loss of votes was due to those who were dissatisfied with Hitler's refusal to accept Vice-Chancellorship. Papen resigned and was replaced by General von Schleicher, who had no more support in the Reichstag than Papen.

Then came the famous split in the NSDAP, its then number two man, Gregor Strasser, negotiating with General von Schleicher and offering to accept a Government seat even against Hitler's will. It was the most dangerous moment in Hitler's political career. Many of his followers were getting impatient, Gregor Strasser was extremely popular, and the loss of two million votes seemed to many to mark the beginning of the downward trend. Hitler remained firm, flatly refused participation in the Government other than its chief, and managed to suffocate the Strasser movement. The political deadlock remained. There was no possibility of forming a government with a Parliamentary majority without Hitler. Hindenburg and Schleicher still refused giving the Chancellorship to Hitler.

Observed an extension technique which Hitler employed in January, 1933, which was decisive in his rising to power:

At that time

On January 15, 1933, there were local elections in one of the smallest of German states, Lippe-Detmold. *Ordinarily* In the normal course of things, nobody outside Lippe would have been *vitality* in the least interested in this election. But Hitler decided to make it a test case and the stepping-stone to power, and *he* ~~thoroughly~~ succeeded. ~~Hitler, with~~ all the top-shots and most brilliant speakers and agitators of the Party, *he invaded* ~~went to~~ that tiny state. Hitler spoke three or four times a day, even in the smallest of villages, *to* with audiences numbering not more than fifty; so did the others. The whole population of Lippe was swept away, enthralled and fascinated with National Socialism and the result was victory for Hitler. *Then, Goebbels* ~~The entire Party~~ *went to work. In arguments reminiscent of, "As Maine goes..." the Party Press* ~~Press~~ heralded this election as symptomatic of the will of the German nation. The Government was impressed; Papen got *busy* ~~to work~~ again, talked over Chancellorship the old-Presidency problems with Schleicher who resigned, and ~~as a result~~ Hitler was appointed Chancellor of the Reich on January 30, 1933.

~~In regarding Hitler's rise to power on this date, it is important to note that there was no revolution on January 30, 1933. His appointment as Chancellor by the President of the Reich was~~

in strict accordance with the democratic constitution of the German Republic, and therefore, legal. He was leader of the largest party, in-Parliament constituted by secret ballot, in Parliament. That his use or misuse of power later on violated the Constitution, is another matter.

The next Reichstag elections in March, 1933 gave the NSDAP and the national groups backing the new government a clear majority. Then, gradually, totalitarianism began. First, the Communist Party was dissolved, then the Social-Democrats and the other parties, one after the other, even the national ones that had backed the ^{and} government/were represented in it. On May 2, 1933 all trade unions were dissolved and replaced by the German labor front under leadership of Dr. Ley. By the middle of 1933 Germany was a one-party state. In December of the same year a law proclaimed the unity of party and state, and the NSDAP was totally entrenched in Germany, Hess as Deputy Fuehrer and Roehm as leader of the SA entering the Cabinet of Reich Ministers.

In October, 1933 Germany quitted the League of Nations. Shortly before, von Papen concluded a concordat with the Vatican. In January, 1934

Hitler negotiated a non-aggression pact with Poland and in 1935 a naval agreement with Great Britain. 1935 also brought back the Saar Territory to the Reich by international plebiscite. In 1936, conscription was introduced.

In this brief summary of the political side of Hitler's rise to power, all of which data has been taken directly from specific statements made by those men who have been directly concerned with its development, Bohle, Buch, Darre, Amann, Schwartz as well as the top Nazis at the Nuremberg jail, we see the result of a smooth-functioning minority forcing its will upon a clumsy uncontrolled majority. For all purposes, Hitler had perfected a political machine which crushed all opposition, and stole the elections from under the noses of the non-voting uninterested bulk of the people. It is also of great importance to note his violent campaign to win control of one of the smallest of the German States and the successful representation of this tiny minority as the will and desire of all Germany.

focused from a world viewpoint directed towards a re-orientation and re-evaluation of German history and German symbols.

4. Such educational plans must include all the German people and employ all types of media with emphasis directed at the Hitler Youth Group.

Such general formulations are sufficiently plastic to permit of local adoption regardless of the situation. They utilize original German symbols, but stress a reconsideration of their values. They strive to develop emotional maturity and clear thinking in a global sense in all of the people. They are compatible with the ideas of thinking Germans and thinking Americans whose only desire is to develop a healthy, emotionally stable German nation.

Such a program can be almost overwhelming in its details. It will take at least two decades, maybe more, before it becomes effective. It will require thousands of intelligent personnel in all spheres of education, including particularly the fields of teaching, sociology, anthropology, psychology, and psychiatry, to put it across. But it must be done if we are to hold out any hope of curing a seriously sick Germany.

CHAPTER IX. WE MUST LEARN

While it is obviously essential that we must sooner or later develop some system for the re-education of Germany, nevertheless, if we are to be at all successful in European affairs, it would seem even more imperative that we learn from the horror and chaos of Nazi Germany some lessons applicable to our own country. So far, most of the speaking and writing dealing with the Nuremberg trial and the war criminals has been directed at demonstrating the legal technicalities involved and vindicating the trial itself. What lessons have been deduced have been pointed in a legal direction, emphasizing the fact that such trials will in the future deter other ruthless individuals from wars of aggression and crimes against humanity.

^{my} In studying ^{of the Nuremberg Nazis, it becomes apparent} the ~~twenty-one top criminals,~~
however, it rapidly becomes apparent that their personalities and their reign of terror in Germany yield information which could well be studied and ^{a to our own problems} adopted in our own backyard. In Germany we found a business-like machine set up to control 80 million people and to ^{assume} develop unlimited personal power for those in charge. This political machine had ^{been} developed ~~through the years by driving roughshod over~~

rolled like a jing ponant
~~the rights of the entire nation but, as has been~~
~~described, was developed legally and democratically.~~
~~simply through the activity of its enthusiastic~~
~~directors. Once developed, it took over the power~~
in power, however, it took over the
~~of life and death and completely controlled German~~
over the rights of the people
~~civilization.~~

Here in America, we are very apt to say to
ourselves "we are much too civilized for such a
situation to develop. We could not possibly regress
politically *point*
~~in civilization to a degree wherein a small group~~
~~of people could seize power and then control the~~
~~government in a fashion comparable only to those~~
~~ancient totalitarian dynasties of pre-Christian~~
~~eras. We in America could not possibly permit any~~ *few men*
~~small group of people so to control our lives that~~
the life and death of the population were completely
in their hands."
there is
Are we so very different from those people on whom totalitarianism
~~The answer to this statement has been pain-~~
imposed? The answer is that
~~fully and brutally demonstrated in Germany, which~~
~~was just as civilized, and whose people are es-~~
~~entially the same as our people, until they were~~
~~misled by the power of Hitler's propaganda. So far~~
see
~~as can be determined, there is no real difference~~
between the individual German and the individual
American, ^{except for the German's more ardent belief in his ideologies.}
It is true that the German nation has a
had a common speech,
more homogeneous culture. It has been functioning

and all that it implies in ~~an~~ ^a ~~established~~ two-party system and tolerance for minority rights,

together for a much longer period than ~~the~~ ^{we have been a} American nation, and consequently, as ~~a~~ ^{Germany} whole, would be more easily swayed by skillful propaganda techniques. But, ~~this one fact is extremely important. It is important because it represents the major difference between our country and Germany. Aside from our lack of homogeneity,~~ ^{I am convinced that} there is nothing in America today which could prevent the development of a ~~facist state within a period of months.~~ ^{Nazi-like} Such a statement ^{to you,} perhaps sounds extravagant, ~~and one might~~ ^{you may} say we do not have the leaders and neither do we have the basic ideologies and concepts which they ~~would be~~ ^{leaders} could use. ^{examine}

Let us ~~look a little bit to these statements.~~ ^{denials}

As far as the leaders go, the Hitlers and the Goerings and the Goebbels and all the rest of them are not special types. Their personality patterns, ~~as demonstrated in the previous chapters of this book,~~ indicate that, while they are not socially desirable individuals, ~~they~~ ^{they're like} could very easily be found in America. Neurotic individuals like Adolf Hitler, suffering from hysterical disorders and obsessive complaints, can be found in any ~~hospital~~ ^{psychiatric} clinic, and there are countless hundreds of similar personalities, thwarted, discouraged, yet ~~always~~

All these men had three traits or ^{characteristics} in common. Not at all
neurotic traits, they were; overweening ambition, low ethical standards,
a strongly developed nationalism which justified anything done in
the name of Germanism.

- behind big desks directing
big affairs as businessmen, poli-
ticians, racketeers.

seeking some solution to their problems, roaming
the streets of any American city at this moment.

Strong, dominant, aggressive personalities like
Goering, different ^{ing} from the normal only in their
complete lack of conscience, are not only not
rare, but can be found in many successful business
or political situations anywhere in the country.

Shrewd, smooth speakers like Goebbels, salesmen
like Ribbentrop, and ^{all} the other political hangers-
on like the financial and legalistic groups, are
individuals who, while they all possess their
idiosyncrasies, can be counted among our own
acquaintances. Political rabble-rousers of the
Streicher and Ley types, can be encountered at
any ^{political} propagandist meeting, and I am sure in our
armed forces, we could locate smooth, diplomatic
politicians, who have the necessary military
background, who would be willing to string along
with the party in ^a ^{able to} power to assure them rapid
promotion to the top.

But ^{these} ^{These} leaders are not spectacularly individual.
They ^{are} ^{were} not personalities who appear once in a
century, but they are individuals common to every
country, to every nationality, who seek only the
opportunity to achieve success regardless of the
cost. There is no doubt that such personalities

Look about you. Have we no ruthless conscientious
men eager to achieve power — men who would
quite

Have we no ultranationalists among us who would
justify any policy, however evil, so long as it
could be said to be of advantage to America?

individuals who, while they all possess their
idiosyncrasies, can be counted among our own
loyalties. Political rabble-rousers of the
stronger and less types, can be encountered at
any propaganda meeting, and I am sure in our
armed forces, we could locate smooth, diplomatic
politicians who have the necessary military
background, who would be willing to strike along
with the party in power to assure their rapid
promotion in the top.
They are not personalities who appear once in a
century, but they are individuals common to every
country, to every nationality, who seek only the
opportunity to achieve success regardless of the
cost. There is no doubt that such personalities

~~exist in America, and there is equally no doubt that~~
~~certain of these individuals would quite willingly~~
~~climb over the corpses of half the population of~~
~~America if by so doing they could gain totalitarian~~
~~control over the other half.~~

So much for the political leaders of a potential American
totalitarianism. Furthermore, as a people greatly resemble
the Germans of two decades ago.
~~In addition to the political leaders themselves,~~
~~shocking as it may seem to some of us, we have a~~
~~very similar background of ideological conceptions~~
~~and are inclined to base our thinking on~~
~~conditioning our thoughts and the same general level~~
~~of immaturity throughout the country that results~~
~~in emotional rather than intellectual evaluations.~~
~~We do not differ on an emotional level from the~~
~~German nation, and no one can deny that the basic~~
~~tools of ideology that Hitler used, minority perse-~~
~~cution, the need for development of a stronger nation,~~
~~country, the need for governmental control of private~~
~~business, are all present in the United States.~~

appeals
- the demand for
demanding
demanding
Munichberg
and find these
roused
canonize are Rosenberg and the Nazis
~~The tool which is most commonly encountered is~~
~~the one dealing with racial prejudices, and it is a~~
~~shocking thing to return from a country like Germany,~~
~~where one has seen racial prejudices carried to the~~
~~extreme, to the United States, where the same racial~~
~~persecution and prejudices are still being hammered~~
~~at in a fashion extremely reminiscent of Germany in~~
~~1923 to 1933. As has been pointed out, Rosenberg~~
~~and Hitler did not originate these prejudices. They~~

demanding racial

56 The demand that veterans take over control of the govt

They exist, with special variation, in America today.

have existed in all countries for many years.

Rosenberg has emphasized to me particularly that these race prejudices exist in America, and he has predicted flatly that the United States will either develop a fascist state within the next fifty years or will undergo a racial revolution.

In a long discussion with Rosenberg on the subject, he stated, "No country can survive with so many powerful minorities controlling so much of their financial wealth. The only unfortunate thing about the German fascist state was that it came too soon in the history of civilization. If we had waited fifty or a hundred years, we would have been recognized as the saviours of the world."

Let me quote:
"America must realize this since it has a two-fold problem, in that it not only has ^{an} the intellectual Jewish minority, but it also possesses a large mass of human strength among its Negroes. If these two minorities get together, a revolution will take place, which may result in the Nordic group being completely overwhelmed."

Such statements, the nearly final mutterings of a criminal in his cell, seem ludicrous to us, but if we read the daily newspapers of the United States, we find the same ideas, thinly veiled, but

part of the... in... the... the...

The source Does that sound ridiculous. Perhaps it should, because its source is that font of so much frantic nonsense, Alfred Rosenberg. But we ^(would be) who ~~are~~ ^{are} intelligently aware of our problems dare ^{lightly} not dismiss such prophecies because the attitude which inspires it did not breathe its last when Rosenberg and his ten companions died. We can find the same clear, thinly veiled in our ~~own~~ public press today.

"America must realize this time it has a two-fold problem, in that it not only has the intellectual Jewish minority, but it also possesses a large mass of human strength among the Negroes. If these two minorities get together, a revolution will take place, which may result in the Nordic group being completely overwhelmed."

Such statements, the nearly final utterings of a criminal in his cell, seem ludicrous to us, but if we read the daily newspapers of the United States, we find the same ideas, thinly veiled, but

We must not forget what happened to millions when the ludicrous Rosenberg had an opportunity to put into action the racial theories with which he had been for so long poisoning himself.

~~openly expressed in our current literature. Even worse, we find some of our highest political servants, members of our Congress, making statements which would do credit only to Rosenberg or Hitler. But many people will say this is a country of free speech, of free thought. How can we prevent these individuals from making such statements? After all, they are just talking, and anyone in America has a right to talk or write as he pleases. ^{That} It is quite true, ~~that they are just talking,~~ but in 1923, Streicher and Ley and Rosenberg and Hitler were just talking, also.~~

~~Interestingly enough, in discussing this problem with von Schirach and Frick and Speer and others of the less ardent Nazis, ^{all said:} they stated,~~ "It does not seem possible that this could have really happened. Back when the Party was being formed, we used to listen to these speeches, and they sounded reasonable, but not one of us ever expected anything more to come from them than simple stimulation of the crowds. No one of us felt that any human being would ever lose his life because of these speeches. We thought we were listening to political propaganda. We made the same sort of speeches. We never knew it would go so far."

Power of the spoken word has been emphasized over and over. As a matter of fact, human beings

are more moved by words than by reason. If in this country we can legally prevent assault and battery of the physical type, why should we not have some legislative procedure prohibiting emotional assault and battery? If we feel that revolutions are illegal, that one individual cannot attack and take away another's property or life, why should we not have laws ~~preventing spoken revolutions~~ and prohibiting people from taking away individuals' concepts and ideals? Why should we not have a ban on the vicious use of the myths of blood and race to the detriment of a large segment of our population?

M. F. Ashley Montagu, in his recent book, Man's Most Dangerous Myth: The Fallacy of Race, discusses the existence of the racial problem in a most intelligent and entertaining fashion. His chapter on race and blood should be studied in every school and read by every American, *Montagu points out how widely accepted is the fallacy* ~~as it brings out the fallacious idea of blood differences, existent throughout the peoples of the world.~~ This author ~~also~~ *and he* emphasizes an important point - the use of this myth for political purposes.

Last summer, ~~Recently,~~ *(populous)* in one of our large states, a politician utilized ~~the theory of racial differences~~ *cheap and dangerous,* and ~~the concept of~~ *the concept of* white supremacy as the major feature of his ~~platform.~~ *campaign.* Here ~~is~~ *was* a coldly calculated technique for political ~~gain.~~ *gain.*

~~gain to obtain votes.~~ There is absolutely no difference between this individual's ~~political~~ *methods* ~~techniques~~ and those of Streicher or Hitler.

Again in another state, returning Japanese war veterans, American heroes, who had been deprived of their homes early in the war as a defense measure, are held up to ridicule and all sorts of abuses. They are attacked by mobs, incited by a few unscrupulous individuals who ~~wish~~ *had benefited* ~~to retain their hold over the real estate and other possessions originally owned by these~~ *by the removal of* Japanese.

An analysis of the motives for the political use of racial myths *anywhere* invariably reveals that those people who ~~are~~ *are* employing them ~~are doing so~~ *it* in the same fashion as did Hitler and his cohorts. They use them as a method of *obtaining* ~~developing~~ personal power, political aggrandizement, or ~~to obtain~~ individual wealth. *I am convinced that continued use of* ~~These myths must be destroyed and must not be continued in this country if we are not to join the Nazi criminals in the sewer of civilization. If we permit anyone to utilize the idea of racial differences, racial intolerance, and the myths of blood and honor, we are simply continuing to propagate those ideologies so successfully employed by the Nazi Party. These ideologies are active in~~ *employed by the Nazis*

(Beyond question)

alone
- even indigenous to -

similar
we nurture these ~~and~~ indigenous racial attitudes, we risk the United States. They are daily passed on from parent to child, from teacher to student, from author to reader. If they continue, *to flourish here we shall* ~~if they develop, we are laying the foundation stone of a~~ ~~be making development of a~~ totalitarian state. This danger is obviously not immediate. It is not immediate for the entire United States, because we are such a vast country, made up of so many different types of populations, with so many different specific attitudes and interests. This heterogeneity of our structure is our present salvation, but smaller areas can be and already have been developed into typical fascist centers. The power politics of Huey Long, who enforced his ideas by police control, *d* ~~is a duplicate example of Hitler's methods.~~ *technique* Hitler's *success in* ~~technique of~~ *first* seizing a small area and of making it firmly totalitarian, must never be forgotten. From a center of strength in Bavaria, he spread across *all* ~~the entire German~~ *y* country. From a similar center of strength located in any single state of this country a similar spread could be predicted. *(You may argue)* But ~~we~~ *may* say "This is a democracy, and in a democracy every individual should be able to vote. In a democracy, ~~it~~ should be easy to spot the budding dictator and defeat him at the poles legally and democratically before he gains power." Theoretically, this is true, but we must never forget ~~the~~

~~lesson of Germany~~ that Hitler was elected by democratic methods in a democratic system, which we ourselves helped to set up, patterned after our own system. He was elected in a democratic way because of the failure of the German democracy to prevent his election, because of its fundamental apathy and lack of interest in the election itself. Such apathy and disinterest is not unknown in the United States and it has been made painfully obvious at many elections that a small minority, functioning as a smooth-running political machine, can and does win elections over an apathetic, lethargic, non-voting majority.

Here then lies ~~our solution~~ and the method for the prevention of a fascist state. Machinery for a democracy has been set up, and if it does not function, it is solely the fault of the members of that democracy. Too many of the people of the United States are content to accept the prerogatives of the Constitution without ever bothering to accept the duties imposed upon them by ^{it} ~~their~~ Constitution. ^{Civil} ~~These duties~~ ^{duty is} ~~primarily emphasize the need for each~~ ^{insure ourselves against totalitarian} ~~citizen to vote,~~ and, if we are to ~~prevent a fascist~~ ^{development in this country,} we must first of all remove all voting restrictions from ^{all} ~~our~~ citizens.

It is time to make the ballot really free, to
~~which would include the complete freedom of the~~
~~ballot, as for example, the eradication of the~~
poll tax and the restrictions on Indians voting, etc.
Secondly, ¹ at every election, every individual eli-
gible to vote must cast his ballot. If this amaz-
ing occurrence took place, political machines which
now rely on a concentrated minority vote could be
wiped out of existence in a single election.

Third, ~~We must refuse to accept anyone in public~~
~~office who makes political capital out of such~~
~~emotionally-laden terms as "Jew" or "Gentile",~~
~~"Protestant" or "Catholic", "White" or "Negro".~~ ¹ ~~if~~
~~he uses such terms to develop disharmony among the~~
~~people of the country.~~ As soon as a figure in
public life is guilty of such a gross crime, he
should be automatically recalled before further
damage can be done.

Then we must undertake to free ourselves
from the yoke of tradition and from the continuance
of the emotional use of such terms as "Jew" and
"Negro" and "Oriental" and "blood" and "race", etc.
We must ^{redeem} ~~apply~~ to our system of education a re-educational technique, ~~not emphasized to force facts~~
~~into the student's head, but rather to actually~~
~~teach him to think.~~ ^{Students} ~~We must~~ ^{may even} rebuild our language
habits, taking out those generalities which actually

not thinking persons
mean nothing, but which produce in most individuals strong, emotional reactions.

If we carry out these simple *reforms* - simple to state, but extremely difficult to do - we will *have* emphasize the rights of everyone inherent in a *established the rights* democracy, ~~and the ability to live a life of liberty and happiness will naturally follow.~~ Only in this manner can we develop a true democracy in fact, not only in name. ~~Such development can come only through the achievement of national maturity, through the development of each individual to a true adult status. When such maturity is reached, each individual will then be competent within himself to evaluate properly the mouthings of our propagandists and will pay no attention to them. When such maturity has been reached, we shall have then developed a functional democracy.~~

Until then total voting and an attempt at proper evaluation of the *candidates to* ballot *are* the only answer. This answer depends upon the citizens of the United States - every single one of *us* ~~them~~. It is up to *us* ~~these~~ *citizens* to determine whether ~~we are to continue with~~ *order* our racial hatreds and prejudices, or whether we are to learn a lesson from the holocaust of Europe, apply it to our own life, and develop a true democratic nation where we and our children can live without bickering, without hatreds, emotionally secure because we have become an emotionally mature civilization.

America will never reach her full stature until we
achieve that goal.

Actually, of course, we shall never reach that goal until we as a people individually ~~reach~~ develop beyond our present emotional ~~infancy~~ adolescence. As a psychiatrist in the Army Service where the need is infantile of our troops can be by accident or ~~error~~ ^{country} I ~~can~~ become convinced that the ~~infantile~~ ^{country} which had only ~~one~~ ^{millions of} infantile young men was itself an emotionally immature. And, remember, ^{of these officers} ~~many of our officers~~ ^{this was} Far too few of our soldiers were mature; a frighteningly high percentage had an emotional-intellectual age of about ten years. The Germans can be said to be a neurotic people. We are not that but in our emotional infidelity, ~~not as~~ we are just ready for any propagandist's mill.